

A
T R E A T I S E
O N T H E
Venereal Distemper,

Containing a
Method of curing it without Salivation,
Danger, or great Expence.

With T W O
D I S S E R T A T I O N S ;

The First on MADNESS from the Bite of
Mad Creatures ;

The Second on CONSUMPTIONS.

With a Method of curing them radically.

By PIERRE DESAULT, M.D. and Member of
the College of Physicians of *Bordeaux*.

Translated from the *French*

By JOHN ANDREE, M. D.

L O N D O N :

Printed for JOHN CLARKE, under the *Royal*
Exchange, Cornhill. 1738.

$$\frac{6}{2}$$

T O
Dr. DANIEL TURNER,
OF THE
College of Physicians, *London*,
THIS
TRANSLATION

As a Testimony of Respect,

Is Inscribed by,

His most Obedient,

Humble Servant,

John Andree.



TO MESSIEURS

The MAYOR, SUBMAYOR, and JURATS.

Governors of the Town and City of Bordeaux, Counts of Ornon, Barons of Veyrines, Brevots and Lords of Eyfines, and of the little Provostship and Jurisdiction between two Seas, Judges Criminal and Civil, &c.

Being in Commission.

*The Marquis D'Estrade, Mayor,
Joseph de Segur, Chevalier, Lord Viscount of Cabanac, Baron of Bellefort, and other Places, Submayor,
Francis Joseph de Galateau, Chevalier, Baron of the Island of Lalande, Lord of the Noble House of Fleyx,
Mr. Joseph Dupin, Advocate in Court,
The Honourable Peter Seincricq, Citizen,
Peter Boyrie, Esq; Lord of the Noble House of Poumarède,
Mr. Flury Dessudres, Advocate in Court,
The Honourable Peter De Kater, Citizen,*

All Jurats of the present Town.

*Mr. John Baptist Maignol, Citizen and Procurator Syndicus,
William Duboscq, Esq; Counsellor Clerk, Secretary in ordinary thereof.*

GENTLEMEN,

I HAVE printed a Book, which I pray most humbly you would give me leave to dedicate to you.

A

It

DEDICATION.

It treats of the *Venereal Disease*, its Nature, Causes, and Species, and contains an easy Method of curing the same without Salivation, Risque or Expence; easy to such a Degree, that every one may become the Instrument of his own Cure.

It also treats of *Madness* from the Bite of Mad Creatures, and its Causes, and proposes a Remedy which has been try'd to prevent and cure it.

And lastly of *Consumption*, and the Method of curing it radically.

This Volume shall shortly be follow'd by two Dissertations, one on the *Gout*, the other on the *Epilepsy*, with the Method of curing them effectually, which I present you likewise beforehand.

From the Time I began this Work, I formed the Design of offering it to you; you are the Fathers of the People, and I thought my self obliged to dedicate to you the Observations I have made in their Service.

You were propos'd by the Vows of this same People, without any Intrigue or the Chance of Fortune, and appointed by the Choice of the King, and cause Peace to reign in this City, Justice and Plenty, without neglecting such magnificent Works as serve for its Decoration. We hope to see erected under your Consulship that august Monument, that superb Ornament, so much wish'd for by People of all Ranks.

Altho' my Book has been examined three times by Order of the Keeper of the Seals, and approved of with Praise by Dr. *Andry*, Regent of the Faculty at *Paris*, President and Royal Censor, it stands nevertheless in need of your Protection: Your Names placed at the Head of this Work secure it from unjust Criticisms, which might oppress it, and your Protection will engage its Author to continue his Labours.

I dare

DEDICATION.

I dare assure you with the Sincerity I owe to the Public, to the Magistrates, and to the Majesty of the Place where I speak, that all the practical Facts, and all the Cures mentioned are true.

I have had the Honour of exercising my Profession during 30 Years under your Inspection, and flatter myself that you will do me the Justice to think me incapable of imposing on the Public in a Matter so grave and serious as that which concerns the Health and Lives of Mankind. What Motive could engage me to it? Should it be Interest? I ask nothing of any body. Should it be the Desire of acquiring Fame? It would be ill done to look for it in Practices I had not try'd, and which Experience would give the Lye to.

Grant me, I beseech you, Gentlemen, your Protection to the Work and myself, who am desirous of dying in the Service of your Citizens with the same Zeal, the same Endeavours and Impartiality I have maintained to this Day, and who am resolv'd to live with profound Respect, perfect Submission and infinite Veneration for the Magistracy and our Magistrates.

DES AULT.

A 2

APPRO-

APPROBATION of Dr. SYLVA, President
of the College of Physicians in the City of Bordeaux.

HAVING carefully perused the three Dissertations composed by Monsr. *Default*, M. D. received at *Bordeaux*, my Collegue, on the *Venereal Disease*, *Madness* and *Consumption*, I am of Opinion that the Author may hope for a general Approbation from those of the Profession, who shall read them; and that those who shall put them in practise, may reap considerable Advantages from them. *Bordeaux*, the 22d of *August*, 1732.

S Y L V A.

APPROBATION of Dr. SERIS, Professor
Royal of the University of Bordeaux, and Member
of the College of Physicians of the same City.

THE Learning which shines in the Dissertations on the *Venereal Disease*, on *Madness*, and *Consumption*, which Dr. *Default* publishes, doth him infinite Honour; and the practical Maxims they contain, deduced from the best Sources, cannot fail being very useful to Persons of the Profession who may read this Work, as also to the Public. *Bordeaux*, the 9th *Octob.* 1732.

S E R I S.

P R E-

P R E F A C E.

IOW N, the Title of this Treatise resembles so much the Language of Empyricks, that there may be Room to suspect a Method which appears to be new; and the Character of Novelty is sufficient to keep the Reader upon his Guard, so that he may only receive as by Constraint, that which Reason and Experience oblige us to adopt.

Some will also be surpris'd, that in an Age so knowing as the present, and after so many Works have been communicated to the Public upon this Disease, from the Time that it has been known by its Name, I should propose a New Method of curing it, in the manner, as Willis says, of one who after the many excellent Geographers, should pretend to model a new Geography, different from any that has appeared hitherto.

I may, lastly, be accused of Rashness for undertaking to reform a Method authoris'd by so many skilful Physicians and Surgeons who practise it, confirm'd by Experience, and a happy Success, of curing the Pox by Salivation; and which has obtain'd a firm Possession for above a whole Century.

Nevertheless, as all Artificers improve daily their Machines and Works, should Physic only be inactive and indolent, and should we be contented to follow only the Rules of our Fathers and Ancestors, without endeavouring to improve them, either with a View to dispatch or Safety, or to alleviate the Method of Curing?

It has been always my Opinion, that Physicians ought to imitate prudent Gentlemen, who not only preserve carefully the Inheritance they received from
their

P R E F A C E.

their Parents, but also strive to improve it by their Labour and Industry

Fernelius and his Disciple Palmarius, two famous Physicians of the Faculty at Paris, disgusted at the cruel Treatment of the Pox by Salivation, endeavoured to cure it without it; they took upon them to cry down Mercury, and said as much to its Detriment, as we shall to its Commendation.

But if we discover a Method of preserving the Advantages of this grand Remedy, without running the Risques these Authors mention, and of employing all its Usefulness without purchasing it at the Price of a painful Salivation, Mercury will not lose the Reputation of being the chief, and perhaps the only Remedy for the Disorder of Gallantry which seems to aim at the Destruction of Mankind, the same Way by which Nature would perpetuate them.

We may justly apply to Mercury the Praises, which Sydenham bestows on Opium. “ I thank God, says
“ he, that he has been pleased to give Mankind, to
“ alleviate their Pains, a Remedy of this Importance
“ fit to sooth so many Complaints, and to cure them
“ effectually.

We shall endeavour to make Mercury appear certain in its Effect, and easy to be administer'd, to that degree, that almost any one may become the Instrument of his own Cure.

I shall also shew from Observation, that the Power of Mercury is not confined to the Venereal Disease only, but that I have employ'd it with miraculous Success, after the manner which I shall propose, in the capital Obstructions of the Viscera, and the Diseases depending therefrom, as the Jaundice, the Dropsy, slow Fevers, &c. in hard and painful Tumors of the Intestines formed by Congestion, to make use of the Term of the Antients, in Tumors of the Breasts in the fair Sex, in the King's Evil, the Scall on the
Head,

P R E F A C E.

Head, Inflammations of the Eyes, Ulcers of the Legs, Consumption, the Tape-worm, Wens and the Bite of mad Creatures; of the last there is a Dissertation annexed to this Work.

For the rest, this Treatise is not the Produce of an Imagination work'd up to frame some new System. I can say, with that Sincerity I owe to the Public, that it is the Fruit of several Observations, pursued and digested during more than 30 Years, confirmed by a constant Success, and authoris'd by Reasons which I shall set forth in their proper places.

Observations have an Advantage over Systems, in as much as they are Copies of the Motions and Operations of Nature which doth not vary; they are true at all Times, but Systems are subject to the Caprice of Imagination and the Inconstancy of the human Mind. They are faithful Copies, where every one may discover the Resemblance of the Evil which afflicts him, and the Success of the Remedy, provided Care be taken to mark well the Indication, and the Reason of the Determination. Observators labour for the Advantage of Physick, as may be collected from the Usefulness of those Authors, who have consecrated their Lucubrations to Observation.

My Sincerity will appear sufficiently to the Reader from the Simplicity and Candour of the Observations. You will see that I relate the bad Success as well as the good; which I thought proper to do, to avoid the Obstacles which I take notice of. In this I have followed the Example of Hippocrates, who in L. 5. of his Epid. n. 27. owns, that in the Person of Autonomus in Omilo, he took the Fracture of the Cranium for a Suture: Non animadverti eum sectione indigere; fefellerunt me autem futuræ in se teli noxiam continentes. This great Honesty of Hippocrates made Cornelius Celsus say, that little Wits only will take nothing from themselves, because they have

nothing

P R E F A C E.

nothing to spare. Levia solum ingenia, quia nihil habent, nihil sibi detrahunt.

But my Sincerity will appear yet plainer by the Experience of those, who in Case of Necessity shall put in practise the Method which I propose.

Altho' it is difficult to efface Impressions we receive at School; tho' the first Principles we acquire by Study, and which we practise, may in some manner be compared to those of the Religion in which we have been educated, and which we retain almost all our Lifetime, good or bad; and tho' our first Prejudices, according to Descartes, bear away our Ideas and Judgment; nevertheless, I hope this Method will have some Followers. If Persons without any Reputation or Character, whose Merit only consists in feeding Mankind with Promises and Hopes, meet with sick People, who will trust them with their Health, and Lives, when at the same time they would not trust them with their Purses; I have the more Reason to believe, that upon my Faith and Assertion many will prefer an easy Method without any Hazard, to the Trials of a Salvation, accompanied always with a piercing Pain, and sometimes great Danger.

Besides Self-Love, which has Ingenuity enough to persuade, when the Business is to get rid of Danger and Pain, and which represents often to the greatest Minds weak, but advantageous Reasons as victorious Demonstrations, will not be idle, I hope, in favour of those proposed in this Treatise.

In short, I flatter myself, that a Patient reduced to the Necessity of chusing either a Salvation, or the Practice here introduced, provided he has heard of the Tortures of Salvation and its Risques, will prefer our Method without Pain and Danger, especially if I was allow'd to name those who have experienced its happy Success.

A Person in Orders, who is dear to me upon several Accounts, wanted to dissuade me from publishing this
Trea-

P R E F A C E.

tise. He represented to me with some Eloquence, and in a pathetic Manner, 1st, That it is very dangerous to write in an Age whose Taste is so much refined, and that the great Desire of shewing one's Performance turns often to the Discredit of the Author.

That our own Writings, which we behold with the same Complaisance as a Father his Children, in whom he knows no Faults, are not received so favourably by the Public, that we expose ourselves to Criticism and Censure. 2^{dly}, That if I had an Itching to write, I should not chuse so obscene a Malady, of which even it is hardly permitted to talk, ne quidem nominetur in vobis, and that the Catalogue of Diseases is large enough to pick out another Subject.

I answer'd to the first Article, that judicious Readers regard not so much the Words as the Matter: That Truth hath a certain Beauty independent from the Ornaments of Eloquence, that it is sufficient to propose it to make Connoisseurs embrace it with Pleasure, altho' in an Undress and in Rags. That I was not ignorant Criticisms were to be feared, so much the rather by me, because all our best Authors had complained of it, even of Injuries and Calumnies with which they have been bespatter'd at the publishing of their Works, which however had not discouraged them from continuing their Endeavours. And if they had not surmounted this pannick Terror, the Science of Physick would be deprived at present of their Observations, which are its true Riches, far beyond the great Number of Systems, with which it has been overloaden within this Century last past: Quæ Medicinam potius onerant quam ornant. That the very Criticism which he would make me apprehend, would at least be a Proof the Work was good for something, since People seldom take pains to criticise Writings which fall of themselves, for fear of giving them some Weight by a serious Refutation.

P R E F A C E.

In short, that Works despised during the Author's Life, are often valued after his Death, when commonly the Reasons for criticising are at an End.

History furnishes us with a memorable Example in the Person of Homer, who was so despised whilst he lived, that he was obliged to beg his Bread ; but after his Death the circumjacent Cities disputed with each other the Birth of this great Man.

And as to the second Objection, I thought I was as free to treat on the Diseases of Gallantry, as he to preach on the Crime which commonly occasions them. That the reading of my Observations on the Venereal Disease, so far from being prejudicial, might be of Service to inspire Libertines with an Apprehension of being punish'd in this World with a shameful Malady. And that I was even surpris'd that Preachers, in their Sermons against Incontinency, did not represent the Danger of this Disorder, the Expences subsequent to it, and other Difficulties, which infallibly and almost necessarily attend it.

That at all Events, as I believed I had made some useful Observations in the Cure of these Disorders, I thought myself indispensibly obliged to publish them, and that I ow'd to the Town and Territory which I served upwards of 30 Years, the Fruit of the Observations I had made during that Time.

I shall publish, God willing, very soon two Dissertations, one on the Gout, and the other on the Epilepsy.

A P P R O -

APPROBATION of the Royal Censor.

I Have read by Order of my Lord Keeper of the Seals, this Manuscript, entitled, *A Treatise on the Venereal Disease, with a Method of curing it without Salivation, Danger, or great Expence; also a Dissertation on Consumptions, and the Method of curing it, by Pierre Default, M. D. &c.* and have found nothing in it that should hinder a Licence being granted for its Impression, Paris, the 28th Nov. 1730.

AND R Y, Doctor Regent, and President of the Faculty of Physick at Paris.

APPROBATION of the Royal Censor.

I Have read by Order of my Lord Keeper of the Seals, a Manuscript, entitled, *A Treatise on the Venereal Disease, with a Method of curing it without Salivation, Danger, or great Expence, with a Dissertation on Consumptions, by P. Default, M. D. &c.* The Method of salivating to cure the Venereal Disease has always supported itself, notwithstanding the Efforts of many Great Men to cry it down, in order to bring into Practice that which the Author proposes after their Example. It is without Doubt difficult to discountenance a Method which our Ancestors have transmitted to us, and which the Success of a long Course of Years hath, in a manner of speaking, render'd sacred. And Prudence also forbids to attempt another, till undeniable Demonstration shall have convinced us, that this last is preferable to that we would turn out of doors. However, none of these Reasons ought to damp the Enquiry of those, who charged with the Health of the Public should not be satisfied with the Means which the Art suggests, when more secure ones may be had. Without doubt the Author of this Work has proceeded upon these Notions; and with due Regard for his Zeal, in attempting a Method contrary to the ancient Practice, we are of opinion, that what he says in Favour of that which he prefers, may serve to spur on the Professors of this Art to

new Discoveries, the Fruit of which cannot but be advantageous to the Public. For the rest, if all the Histories with which this Work abounds, seem not to be equally necessary, we believe nevertheless, the equitable Reader will not be out of humour at them, who, we know, is always ready to indulge the Endeavours of Authors of pleasing whilst they instruct. *Paris, the 26th of May, 1731, P E T I T.*

II. APPROBATION *of the Censor who first examined this Manuscript, and which the Lord Keeper of the Seals has given him to examine a second Time.*

THE Author of this Manuscript, who is a Doctor of Physick well known for his Skill, prefers, in treating of the *Venereal Disease*, Evacuations by Stool to Salivation, and saves by this means the diseased a great deal of Torment; whereas the common Method leads him through the most cruel Trials, without mentioning the terrible Risques it makes him run; a great many perishing miserably in the midst of the horrid Torments of a Salivation. The Flux of the Belly, which the Author promotes, is more conformable to the Laws of Nature, and carries away more easily the Cause of the Disease. Many learned Men before him have projected the same Thing. There is Reason to hope, that this Method will obtain in Time, and that those who are prepossess'd in Favour of the other will relinquish their Prejudices, upon reading with Attention this Treatise, and weighing well its Principles; which to be understood, require the Person to have some Knowledge of Physick. The Author seems to have accommodated himself in divers Places to the Understanding of the Surgeons; it were to be wished he had every where had the same Regard to them; and especially, that he had avoided quoting in this Treatise a Number of *Latin* Passages which they cannot understand, and which for this Reason they will look upon as foreign to the Subject. *Paris, the 14th Jan. 1732. A N D R Y.*



A

T R E A T I S E

O N T H E

V E N E R E A L D I S E A S E .

WE shall divide this Treatise into two Parts. In the first of which we shall examine all that relates to the Theory of the Venereal Disease; in the second we shall lay down the practical Part, and a Method to cure it after an easy Manner without Salivation, Danger, or great Expence.

F I R S T P A R T .

Of the Theory of the Venereal Distemper.

WE shall divide this Part into three Chapters. In the first shall be given a Description of this Disease, and its Symptoms. In the second we shall inquire into the Cause and Nature of the Virulency which produces it; and in the third we shall speak of its Original and Æra.

B

C H A P.

C H A P. I.

*Of the Description of the Venereal Distemper,
and its Symptoms.*

THE celebrated *Sydenham*, so concise and correct in the Description of Diseases, has given us so exact an account of the Venereal Distemper, that I thought I could not do better than translate it Word for Word, and at full Length: To which I add, what Experience, the reading of practical Books, and the Conversation with Persons experienced in this Matter, have taught me.

“ The Venereal Disease is propagated either
 “ by Generation, as when the Child comes
 “ into the World pox’d through the Fault of
 “ one or other of the Parents; or by the
 “ touching of some soft and porous Part of
 “ a Person infected. In this Manner we see
 “ 1.) That the Infant gives it to the Nurse
 “ or the Nurse to the Child; in which Case
 “ the first Symptoms of it appear on the Nurse’s
 “ Breast, or in the Child’s Mouth. 2.) Chil-
 “ dren are infected by lying with diseased Per-
 “ sons; for altho’ grown Persons, whose Skin
 “ and Flesh are grown hard, don’t take the In-
 “ fection without impure Coition, notwithstand-
 “ ing they lie in Bed with infected Persons, yet
 “ Children whose Pores are more open, and
 “ the Flesh tender, may receive the Venereal
 “ Taint, which I have observed more than once,
 “ by lying in Bed with infected Parents. 3.) By
 “ im-
 I

the VENEREAL DISEASE. 3

“ impure Coition, and by this way especially
“ the Pox is convey'd; for the Pores of the
“ Yard being dilated in Proportion as it
“ swells, soon suck in the Infection from a
“ Venereal Ulcer or Pustule, in the Sheath of
“ the Womb. And it is well to be observed,
“ that a Woman may seem to be in good Health,
“ and yet communicate the Pox; for having an
“ Ulcer or Pustule hid in the Vagina, the Venom
“ is detained in those Parts, and is in some sort
“ ejected by the Monthly Purgation.

“ This Contagion, in my Opinion, first seizes
“ the fleshy Substance of the Penis, occasions
“ an Inflammation on the Glans which degene-
“ rates into an Ulcer, and furnishes the *Sanies*
“ which we see run in a *Gonorrhœa*; what per-
“ suades me of this is, that I have seen this
“ kind of virulent Matter sweat out of the po-
“ rous Substance of the Glans, and not cast out
“ of the *Urethra* when there was no Ulcer ei-
“ ther in the *Glans* or Prepuce; but at length
“ the Disorder penetrating deeper, it gnaws
“ and destroys the *Prostatæ*, as has been ob-
“ served in the Bodies of such as died of this Dis-
“ ease.

“ The Distemper begins and makes its Progress
“ in the following Manner. The Sick, (soon-
“ er or later, according as the Woman with
“ whom he had Conversation, has been more
“ or less infected, and according to his Consti-
“ tution, which makes him more or less dispo-
“ sed to receive the Infection) is first seized
“ with an unusual Pain in the Genitals, with

“ a certain Sensation as if his Testicles turned:
“ Afterwards if the Prepuce covers his
“ Glans, there appears an Eruption, which re-
“ sembles by its Bigness, Colour and Figure, a
“ Spot of the Meazles, and presently after a
“ Liquor distils gently like Seed, which changes
“ every Day, becomes yellow, more fluent
“ than the white of an Egg; and when the
“ Gonorrhœa is more virulent, it grows green,
“ and sometimes Blood is mixt with it in abun-
“ dance. The said Eruption turns to an Ulcer,
“ at first like the *Aphthæ* in Childrens Mouths,
“ which eats daily deeper and wider, and the
“ Lips become hard and callous.

“ It is to be noted that this Pustule seldom
“ arises in those who have had a Gonorrhœa
“ formerly, or whose Glans is uncovered, be-
“ cause this Part is grown hard, either by being
“ exposed to the Air, or by the frequent rub-
“ bing of the Linnen, which makes it less sus-
“ ceptible of the Virulency: These therefore
“ get no Ulcer, but only the Gonorrhœa which
“ has been described. Other Symptoms pre-
“ sently follow this Running, a great Sense of
“ Pain at the time of Erection, as if it were
“ press’d at both Sides with a strong Hand. This
“ chiefly happens in the Night, when the Sick
“ begins to be hot in the Bed: This painful
“ Contraction of the Yard is a *pathognomonick*
“ Sign of a Gonorrhœa called *Cordee*. The
“ Yard is also bowed by the Contraction of the
“ Bridle, which occasions a violent Pain. There
“ is moreover a heat of Urine, which is hardly
“ per-

“ perceived in making Water, but presently
“ after the Patient is violently pain’d, through
“ the whole Duct of the *Urethra*, especially at
“ the *Glans*.

“ It happens sometimes that the urinary
“ Passage having been excoriated by the Acrid-
“ ity of the running Matter, Nature being
“ over officious, breeds new Flesh there of a
“ soft and spongy Consistence, which growing
“ daily, forms what we call Caruncles, or Car-
“ nosities, obstructing the urinary Canal in such
“ a Manner that the Patient cannot make Wa-
“ ter: These Excrescencies are vastly trouble-
“ some to manage, and occasion a Disorder
“ more formidable than Death itself; they also
“ emit a certain Ichor from the little Ulcers
“ which accompany them.

“ It happens also, that the Matter which
“ should have run off by the Gonorrhœa being
“ stopt by Astringents ill timed, or by some
“ violent Motion, falls upon the Scrotum, and
“ brings on a Swelling and Inflammation of the
“ Testicles, sometimes of one, sometimes of
“ both; then the running ceases, but the Heat
“ of Urine continues.

“ But when by the Length of the Distemper,
“ and the Virulency occasioned in the Parts, it
“ mixes by degrees with the Blood, or that by
“ Astringents given unskilfully, the Matter is
“ drove into the Blood, the Pox appears, and
“ manifests itself. The Buboës in the Groin
“ establish its first Degree, the Head-ach, and
“ Pains in other Parts of the Body, as the

“ Shoulders, the Arms, the Head, &c. these
“ Pains come on by Intervals, and without any
“ order, especially in the Night when the Pa-
“ tient feels the Warmth of the Bed, and
“ continue till Morning. There are also Scabs
“ and Scurf in various Parts of the Body,
“ and these are yellow like a Honey-comb,
“ and sometimes have large Surfaces as they
“ are described by Authors in their Trea-
“ tises on the Leprosy. The more these Erup-
“ tions appear without, the less the Patient
“ suffers. These Symptoms increase by Degrees,
“ especially the Pain, which is sometimes so
“ sharp, that the Patient cannot keep in Bed,
“ but is forced in a restless Manner to walk about
“ his Chamber ’till Morning. Moreover after
“ these violent Pains, hard Nodes grow up-
“ on the Bones, called *Exostoses*, like the
“ Spavin in Horses Feet; these Tumours bring
“ on Inflammation and Ulcers, and are fol-
“ lowed by a Caries and rotting of the Bones.
“ *Phagedenick* Ulcers seize various Parts of the
“ Body, and most commonly begin in the
“ Throat, and are sometimes propagated to
“ the Cartilage of the Nose, which they con-
“ sume, so that the Nose wanting its Support-
“ er, falls in. The Ulcers and Pain increasing
“ daily, the Patient sinks under it, after he
“ has led a miserable Life, through the
“ Stench, Pain, Rotting, and Shame more hor-
“ rid than Death itself, till at length one Mem-
“ ber rotting away after another, the mangled
“ Car-

“ Carcase odious to God and Man is hid under
“ Ground.”

From this exact Description which *Sydenham* has given us of the Venereal Disorder it appears, that the Gonorrhœa, Bubo, Phimosis, Paraphimosis, Chancres, Warts, Swellings, &c. differ only from the Pox more or less; that the Leaven which produces them all is the same, and that it is only from the Difference of the Parts seized, that these different Complaints take their Distinction. You'll see the Proof of this clearly in our following Observations; since a Gonorrhœa suppressed by Astringents has produced a Pox, as likewise a Phimosis, Bubo, or Chancre not treated according to Art, or the Method which was proper.

Secondly, It is to be observed that not only the Gonorrhœa, Buboes, &c. are produced by the same Cause as the Pox, but that they are often the Symptoms thereof, and prove the Existence of the Pox without the Concurrence of any other Signs, called Chirurgical, as Ulcers, rotting of the Bones, Pustules, Tetters, &c. which I have often found decisive in Consultation. When a Gonorrhœa, a Chancre, or Bubo, do not give way to the common Remedies, and that they are not to be conquer'd by the Method used in those Disorders, it is a certain Sign they are fed by a Ferment from the Mass of Blood, and that the Pox has a Share in it. Or when Disorders after having disappeared, seemingly well cured, bud up again some time after, the Patient not having given Occasion to

8 A T R E A T I S E on

it by any suspicious Commerce, you ought to form the same Judgment.

Thirdly, Nothing is more surprizing than to see Disorders which had appeared to submit to simple Remedies, return thirty Years after, as *Fernelius* has observed, and we shall relate in our Observations. *Tempore lues Venerea revirescit, recurritque interdum post trigesimum quintum annum, tantoque intervallo morbi fomes quasi sepultus delitescit.* So that no time is to be fix'd for these Disorders, since we see the Patient from his first Adventure passes twenty or thirty Years in good Health, and gets sound and healthy Children; yet the Accidents of the Pox come about again with the Years, to trouble the approaching Age, and recal to mind former Transgressions. We shall endeavour to account for these Phænomena in the System we are going to propose.

Fourthly, We ought to be attentive to the different Marks under which the Pox hides itself; there are many Maladies under whose Appearance it plays its Game. *Ludit sub persona variorum morborum, et ingens medico facessit negotium.* So that if you have not Skill to know it in a Disguise, if you use not the Precaution to interrogate the Patient how he has spent his Youth, you lose time and the Medicines, and you harr'ss the Patient to no Purpose. *Mercurialis* proposes a practical Rule which no Practitioner should be ignorant of, *Cum videris morbum quempiam communibus remediis non curari, suspicatur esse Morbum Gallicum cognominatum.*

Baglivius after him assures us that in obstinate Diseases one ought always to suspect the Pox. *In pertinacibus virorum Morbis semper suspicandum de Lue Gallica.*

It mimicks not only the Disorders of the Parts of Generation, or of the neighbouring Parts, as Impotency, Suppression of Urine, but it counterfeits also Deafness, Ophthalmies, Consumptions, Vomitings, &c. as we shall shew in our Observations. *Nec solum morbos partium generationi dicatarum mentitur, verum etiam omnibus et singulis corporis partibus bellum indicit, et sub larva variorum morborum imponit.*

But as a Physician ought carefully to examine all the Symptoms which make known the Pox in Disguise, so should he likewise be upon his Guard to contemplate them without Prepossession, that he may not lay to the Pox such Disorders as may be accounted for, and cured without bringing them under the Idea of a Venereal Taint. I shall relate upon this Head a remarkable Observation, in the second Part of this Treatise, where three of us were unanimous in our Opinion, and yet all three were deceived.

Fifthly, It should be observed that a Patient who has the Pox, when he comes to be attack'd by any other Disorder, of what kind soever, is more difficult to cure. *Vires præbet indomitas Lues.* This practical Observation is known to all the Surgeons of the Army, who look with an evil Eye upon the Wounds of suspicious Subjects. I have known a Surgeon of this Town observe

observe that a Patient upon whom he had performed the *Bubonocèle*, had the Pox, by the Wound not healing, by its Colour and Manner; and accordingly the Patient upon asking, confess'd more than was necessary to condemn him, and by the help of Frictions the Wound was at last healed.

Sixthly, The Pox, when inveterate, attacks often the Liver. You ought to have regard to the State of this Bowel in the Patient whom you examine and suspect, as *Verduc* mentions in his Surgery, *Hic veluti malignitatis nidus conflatur*, This as it were is the Nest of the Virulency.

C H A P. II.

Of the Nature of the Venereal Virulency.

HAVING giving a Description of the Venereal Disease, we are next to enquire into the Nature of the Venom which produces it; and without launching out into the Recital and Examination of the various Opinions on this Head, I shall propose mine.

I think the Venereal Leaven consists in imperceptible Worms, which upon approaching are communicated from one Body to another, and afterwards multiply in the Person who has received them, in the manner as I shall explain in its proper Place.

This Opinion, which at first view seems a Paradox, will not appear so frivolous if you reflect seriously and without Prejudice upon the following Propositions.

First,

First, Although the Worms which commit the Havock in pox'd People are not seen distinctly, you cannot but admit them, because the different Configurations of the Salts are not seen any better, of which some would form Ideas in our Imaginations, and upon which they would have it the Venereal Disorder and its Symptoms depend. Thus Supposition for Supposition ours ought to be preferr'd, which makes us admire the Hand of GOD, who is able to produce well organized Insects, although less than the Particles of the thinnest Liquid. And as this Hypothesis accounts for certain Phænomena of the Disease, which cannot be explained by the Hypothesis of the Salts, but after a lame manner, we follow the Example of Astronomers, who prefer those Systems which save the greatest Part of the Phænomena.

Secondly, This Idea of the pocky Worms, although they come not under the Cognizance of our Senses, will not appear so wild, when you reflect that the modern Philosophers are of Opinion, that Lice, Fleas and Crablice have upon the Surface of their Bodies other Insects which plague them as much as they do us; and which are as little in Proportion to their Bigness, as they are small if compared with ours.

Thirdly, The Itch, Rottenness and Ulcers are produced by Worms which corrode the Parts, and are the true Cause of the Destruction of the Substance which characterises them. Some Surgeons of Credit have assured me, that
they

they have seen without Microscopes Worms crawl in Ulcers; and we see that all the Remedies made use of to cure them are proper to kill Worms, as the Tincture of Myrrh, Aloes, Spirit of Wine, the Decoction of Southern Wood, of the lesser Centaury, of Wormwood, Mercurial Remedies, &c. Now if we are forced to admit of Worms in Ulcers, since the naked Eye discovers them, why should it be difficult to be persuaded that the Pox, whose principal Symptoms are Ulcers, Rottenness, Pustules, &c. is also the produce of Worms of a certain Kind.

Fourthly, I say yet more, that it is probable all other contagious Distempers proceed from Worms, as the Hydrophobia, Scurvy, Small-Pox, Plague, &c. and to be a little particular.

The Spittle and Urine of a mad Dog swarm with little Worms; this Observation we find in *Avicenna*, and *Salmuth* also reports it, *Observ.* 83. *Centur.* 2. One may believe without a ridiculous Credulity, that the Penetration of those Animalcula which the Slaver of a mad Dog is full of, by the opening of the Wound made by the Dog's Teeth, communicates the Madness. Besides, *Palmarius's* specific Powder, against the Bite of mad Dogs, is composed of Plants which we daily make use of to destroy Worms.

The Pustules of the Small-Pox swarm likewise with Worms; you may read upon this Head the *Treatise of Dr. Andry about the Generation of Worms*; and I am inclinable to believe, that the Worms which make the Ha-
vock

vock in the Small-Pox cling fast to the Subject which brings from the Mother's Belly a certain Lympha serving them for a Matrix and Nourishment; but when this Humour is dissipated and consumed, they fasten then no more, for which Reason it is seldom that a Person has the Small-Pox twice.

The Plague according to several Authors is produced by Worms. The R. Father *Kircher*, in his Book *De Mundo subterraneo* explains it by Worms. *Georgius Agricola* mentions a Plague in which almost the whole Body swarmed with Worms: *quæ totum fere corpus in putredinem verminosam resolvebat*. *Etmuller*, p. 238. This Conjecture is supported by *Hildanus's* Observation, who remarks that the Plague was known from the Air swarming with uncommon Insects, and which proves, that the same Temperature of the Air and Seasons, that have hatched these Insects, are also proper for the Generation of the pestilential Worms.

The last Plague which visited *Marseilles*, stopped suddenly, at the time of its greatest Rage, which may be easily explained; because the Disposition of the Air, which hatched the pestilential Worms, changed at once, so that the Worms perished, and propagated no more, as we have observed of the Caterpillars with which the Tops of our Houses were covered 15 Years ago, and as we see every Year the Flies and other Insects perish, when the Season which produces them changes.

But

But if the Plague had been occasioned by Fermentation and Exaltation of the Humours, it would not have ceased in this Manner; on the contrary it would have made its Progress, and increased continually.

A practical Observation proves that the Plague proceeds from Worms, since we see the Symptoms produced by Worms in Children, are the same as are commonly observed in the Plague, *viz.* Faintness, Nauseating, Vomiting, the Hick-up, Dysentery, Delirium, Lethargy, Convulsions, and often sudden Death.

Now if the Plague and its Symptoms may be accounted for from Worms, why should it not be permitted to explain the Pox by Worms less active than the pestilential ones; and so much the rather, as it has some Affinity with the Plague, not only on account of its Contagion, but also of several Symptoms, of which note these taken from L. 3. of *Hippocrates's Epidemics*, intitled, *Status Pestilens*. They saw, says this Author, large Pustules, which appeared all over the Body, and especially in the Head, pustulous Ulcers in the private Parts, Inflammations, the falling of the Hair and of the Beard, Buboes in the Groins, succeeded by Ulcers, from whence oozed out an ichorous Serum resembling Pus, and other Symptoms, which denote to us at present the Pox, and which are the certain Signs that characterise it.

Le Capucin Charitable, in his Memoirs upon the Plague, has remarked also the Affinity there was

was between the Pox and the Plague, except that this is very acute, and the other chronic; he reports the Observation of a pocky Person in whom a pestilential Bubo fixed upon his pocky one.

The Scurvy seems to be produced by Worms. *Etmuller* reports that the Spots spread over the Bodies of scorbutical Persons, are full of Worms; and it may be, that seafaring Persons contract it, because the Matter of the insensible Transpiration losing its Volatility by the Salt Victuals, and the Sea Air which they respire, become a proper Matter for hatching these sort of Worms. See in *Sanctorius* the Manner how Lice are bred, and I almost believe, that the crackling of the Bones which is a Symptom of the Scurvy, comes from the Worms devouring and consuming that sweet Liquor which Nature separates in the Joints to make their Motion soft and easy, and which has the same Effect in the Articulations as the Grease put upon the Axle-Tree of the Wheels of a Coach.

5thly, If from an Analogy of the Effects of Nature, which fall under our Senses, we may reason and apply them to those we do not see, we shall mention here the Example of certain little Insects in the *French Islands of America*, of which Father *Labat*, Tom. 1. p. 156. speaks in his Voyage. These are his Words.

“ The *Chique*, which the *Spaniards* call *Nigas*, is a little Animal, black in its beginning, and is found in Places where Ashes are, or which are not cleanly. This Insect passes
“ easily

“ easily through the Stockings, and commonly
“ lodges under the Nails of the Feet, in the Joints,
“ or under the Skin, where it is a little raised.
“ The Pain it causes in piercing through the
“ Skin, or rather Scarf Skin, is like the biting
“ of a Flea. After it is lodged, it gnaws gra-
“ dually the Skin about it, where it excites but
“ a little itching, like a gentle tickling, it grows
“ bigger by degrees, stretches out and becomes
“ at last as big as a Pea: In this State it lays its
“ Eggs, which are hatch’d, and bring as many
“ little *Chiques*, which lodge about their Mo-
“ ther, feed there like her, and increase to that
“ degree, that if care be not taken to extirpate
“ them, they rot the Flesh all about, and occa-
“ sion malignant Ulcers, and sometimes a Gan-
“ grene. But when they feel them get in, or
“ soon after, nothing is so easy as to remove
“ them, either by one’s self, or with the Assist-
“ ance of another. The Blackness of the
“ *Chique* makes it easily perceived between the
“ Flesh and Skin; then they take a Pin or a
“ pointed Knife, and lay open the Place about
“ the Hole it has made in getting in; in this
“ Manner they take away the Skin all about
“ the *Chique*, and when it appears uncovered,
“ and entire, they take it out, and fill up the
“ Hole with Tallow, or what comes out of the
“ Ears, or else and much better with Tobacco
“ Ashes. But when the *Chique* is neglected, or
“ in pulling out, left between the Flesh and
“ Skin, People expose themselves to get ma-
“ lignant

“lignant Ulcers, and to be long under the Surgeon’s Hands.”

If the *Chique* between the Skin and Scarf Skin is able to multiply and produce there Tumours and Ulcers, why shall it not be permitted to think that the Venereal Worms introduced in the Subject which receives them, may also multiply and produce Tumours in the Groin, and Prepuce, called Bubo, Phimosis and Paraphimosis, and Ulcers on the Glans and Prostatae, called Chancres and Gonorrhœa?

In short, it is enough for us to allow that in one single Malady, the Contagion comes from Worms, to establish a Proof, that all contagious Diseases arise from them. Nature is uniform in her Operations, and there is room to believe, that as in the Production of all Animals and Plants she performs Generation by means of Ovula, and progressive Motion by Articulation and Muscles; so she likewise makes use of Worms to communicate Infection in all Diseases bearing the Character thereof.

6.) By the System of Worms you may account for all the Phænomena which regard both the Theory and Practice of the Venereal Disease; many of which receive but a forced Explanation from the other Systems, and in particular,

You explain in the first Place their Infection very easily. An infected Person, whose Parts swarm with Worms, may easily communicate them, in Conjunction, when the Pores are open; and from the time the first Worms have penetrated into the Parts of either Sex, they multi-

ply there when they find a Disposition for it, and the Pox makes its Progress in Proportion. If Lice, and Crab-Lice are contracted by approaching, and are soon multiplied ad infinitum, much rather may the pocky Worms introduced into the Parts of either Sex, multiply there more easily as the Liquids filtered there are Materials serving them for Matrixes, and favouring their speedy Generation.

The same Worms which ravage the Glans or Prepuce, the *Prostata* in Men, and the *Glandulæ vaginales* in Women, form Chancres and Gonorrhœas.

The Liquor which runs from the *Prostata* and *Glandulæ Vaginales* is in its natural State clear and limpid, soft and ropy like Oyl. It serves to sheath the Canal of the *Urethra*, to secure it from the Acrimony of the Salts in the Urine, and to render in the Act the Passage of the Seed more easy and quick; but by the impure Mixture of these Worms with which it is loaded in this Distemper, it becomes yellow or greenish, and being degenerated from its soft and Balsamick Nature, it lets the Canal feel all the Heat and Impression of the Salts in the Urine.

These same Worms fixed and thrown together in the Glans or in the Prepuce, open some Vessel there which furnishes an Extravasation of Blood, choaking some other Vessels by Compression, and makes the Phimosis and Paraphimosis.

By the same way of reasoning, when they cluster together in the inguinal Glands, and open there some Vessels, they occasion Tumours impeding the Course of the Liquids, these degenerate into Abscesses, and the Abscesses into Ulcers.

These Worms gnawing different Parts, make Ulcers in the soft Parts and render the Bones carious.

An Exostosis or Tumour upon the Bones proceeds from the opening of the bony Canals which the Worms have pierced; the Juice which circulates there, is extravasated and candies, and raises the Canals, and in this Manner forms the Tumor. It is almost in the same Manner that Mr. *Tournefort* pretends the Tubercles are formed which they stile Hæmorrhoidal, upon the Species of Thistle called by him, *Carduus Vinearum repens*, (*) by Insects pricking the Stalk, which occasions an Extravasation of the Juices, and forms this Swelling there, which *Lemery* in his Treatise of Drugs, believes to be a Sovereign Remedy to dissipate hæmorrhoidal Tumours, as he says he knows from Experience.

The Excrescences about the Fundament called *Cristæ Gallorum* ** the Carnosities of the Canal of the Yard, and those on the Parts of Women are explained in the same Manner as the Exostosis.

By this System you may also resolve, why some who have had Commerce with infected

* The creeping Thistle of the Vineyard.

** Cock's Combs.

Persons, appear to have no Harm, yet 12 or 15 Years after Symptoms of the Pox manifest themselves. I formerly thought, that if no Venereal Symptoms appeared soon after the Opportunity of taking the Infection one might and should be easy; that the Virulency makes always some break at the Place it enters: But the Observation which I shall relate in the second Part proves the contrary. The Reason of it is, that the few Venereal Worms introduced into the Parts or Mass of Blood, maintain themselves there without multiplying considerably, because the good Juices of the Blood, or the Elasticity of the Solids hinder them from increasing much; but when through Age or Excesses the Constitution is weakened, they have an Opportunity of multiplying, and produce the Symptoms of a confirmed Pox.

You may conceive by the same Reason, that after an unhappy Adventure which appeared to be slight, and a palliative Treatment, one may be 20 or 30 Years free from pocky Symptoms, and get healthy Children, and that at last the Pox may manifest itself with the whole Train of its Symptoms.

The few Worms which swim in the Blood, and which succeed each other, in a manner from Father to Son, come to the Testicles only in small Quantity, where they are destroyed by the long and twisted Labyrinths composing the Testicles, through which the Blood is forced to pass, to become Seed.
The

The Case is different, when the Worms have multiplied already, when they have forced the Diameters of the Canals, and ravage at once all the Parts of the Body.

It is easy to conceive, that a certain small Number of pocky Worms may either circulate with the Blood, or fasten to certain Parts, perpetuating the Breed from Generation to Generation, without producing any bad Symptoms; if you reflect that the Worms in the Intestines lie often long without bringing on any Accident hurtful to their Functions, or which betrays them: But when they are grown numerous and come to Perfection, they often bring on deadly Symptoms in Children, and sometimes in grown Persons, as *Bagl.* has observed in his Practice *Cap. de Lumbricis.*

Now Worms of a Foot long, as we often see Children void, and even adult Persons, do not come to that Bigness in one Day, and yet during the time of their Growth the Patient has often been free from any Smptoms to trouble him.

The Solitary or Tape Worm proves what we have said. If it be true what *Hippocrates* says, that this Worm is hatched at the time whilst the Fœtus is lock'd up in its Mother's Belly, and we have seen a Patient, who till the 30th Year of his Age had kept a Tape Worm of a prodigious Length, without Uneasiness, or knowing that he had it, till he voided it after the Manner we shall mention hereafter in our Observations: Why may we not think like-

wife, that a certain Number of Venereal Worms may remain in the Body succeeding from Generation to Generation, without causing troublesome Accidents, until the Juices of the Blood being weakened, the insensible Transpiration grown languid, and the Organs decayed, their Propagation is favoured, and the Symptoms of a confirmed Pox break out? You may also explain why Mercury taken at the Mouth, although continued a long time, never cures a confirmed Pox radically; because the Doses, altho' repeated, cannot destroy all at once those Worms which cause the Disorder, and they which remain have time to multiply and replace those destroyed by the Mercury. Thus we have seen a Woman, who found herself eased for many Years by the use of Mercury taken by the Mouth, when she left it off three Days the same Symptoms appeared again.

By a Reason almost parallel, you may conceive why some who have had Recourse to such mercurial Frictions as produced no sensible Evacuation, have found themselves easy some time, and even thought themselves cured, and yet afterwards relapsed into all the Accidents of the Pox, which have shewn themselves one after another; and I may say with Truth, I have cured many by my Method who had failed of their Cure the other way.

Two Reasons present themselves to resolve this Fact. When you administer the Frictions to make the Mercury act by *Extinction*, that is, without producing any visible Evacuation, you can
throw

throw in but small Quantities of the Ointment, and at some Distance, and possibly you don't kill all the Worms at once, as has been observed before. Besides, altho' you should destroy all the Worms, as you do not carry them off, the Mercury which penetrated the Worms, was not capable of insinuating itself into their Eggs, which are as little in Proportion to the Worms as Fish Spawn is to the Fish that breed it; thus the Eggs of the Venereal Worms being less than the homogeneous Particles of Mercury, cannot be destroyed by them; and as they remain in the Body, after the Dissipation of the Mercury, they may hatch and furnish new Worms, which make the Pox appear again. And *Hippocrates* warns us in his Aphorisms, that we should not depend upon Cures which happen without sensible Evacuation, and that commonly they don't last long. *Non oportet fidere bonis, quæ præter evacuationem aliquam sensibilem eveniunt, quippe talia non multum durare consueverunt.*

You may explain also by this System the Efficacy of Mercury in these Disorders. It is the Sovereign Remedy against Worms, and this is the Reason, according to Mr. *Hartbousser* why it is a Specifick in the Pox, by destroying the Worms which occasion it. Dr. *Andry* observes also, that not only Mercury, but also other Medicines for the Worms cure the Pox, or at least give some Relief, as you may read, p. 148. in his Book upon the Generation of Worms.

The Manner in which Mercury operates, proposed by Mr. *Boisfrayve*, seems to me plain and natural; he thinks it operates by its weight, its round and heavy *Moleculæ* receive a greater Motion than the Blood, by the Impulse of the Heart, and the Contraction of the Arteries, and preserve it a longer time; by this Means they break and remove the Obstructions which resist their Passage; this same Motion makes them penetrate into the Bodies of these Insects, and by their Weight, they destroy the tender and brittle Vessels of these Animals.

You may easily conceive by this Idea, that all the Preparations of Mercury serve only to weaken its Virtue, and I am apt to think, as *Sydenham* says in the following Passage, *Nulum est eximium medicamentum, quod a natura præcipuas vires non acceperit, illud enim in nonnullis effecit officiosa chymicorum Sedulitas ut quæ Remedia bona essent eorum ope paulo deteriora fierent* (*).

You may also give a Reason from this System, how it happens that those who have Pustules, Tetters and external Ulcers, are less fatigued and harassed by Venereal Symptoms; because those Insects fix in the external Parts, drawn thither by the Ordure proceeding from them, and leave the internal Parts at rest.

* There is no considerable Medicine, which has not received its principal Virtue from Nature, for through the officious Diligence of Chymists some Remedies that were good have been spoiled.

Thus

Thus you also explain how it comes that those who have an habitual Gonorrhœa, and Women during the Time of their Courses, do hardly perceive the Effects of the Pox; because the Venereal Worms fix readily in those Parts attracted by the Humours that are found there, and are partly thrown off by those Evacuations. And it is also the Lympha which is filtered in the Glands of the Groin, that attracts them to form there Buboes, as has been said above, the opening of which procures so considerable a Discharge, that the vulgar Proverb says, a Bubo well suppurated is the Crisis of a Pox.

The Usefulness of Issues in the Plague, either by way of Preservation, or to escape harmless, may be accounted for in the same Manner. *Primrose* recommends them, L. 3. *de Febris* cap. 10. *Lindanus*, who had lived in three Plagues, says, that nothing comes up to Issues to preserve oneself from it, and *Etmuller* relates of his Uncle, who had been in *Africa*, in the Kingdom of *Morocco* in a dreadful Plague, which in the space of five Weeks swept away 85000 Persons; that he had kept himself as well as others from the Plague by Means of Issues; with this Circumstance, that when those who had Issues came near any Persons infected, even without knowing it, they presently felt a pricking, and like a mortifying in the Issues, *Et quoque ij qui inscii ad infectos accedunt statim puncturas et quasi mortificationem in*
son-

fonticulo persentiunt, ut quod ipse expertus testatur.

A more plausible Reason cannot be given for this Phenomenon, than that the pestilential Worms had been attracted and fixed by the Pus which ouzed out of the Issue. A Fact of which I am an ocular Witness proves, that Filth can attract and detain Worms, as we have said above, I mean the catching of Wood-Lice, which is done in July or August. They put the Entrails of a Sheep into a Hole in the Cellar, with some sweet Herbs, all the Wood-lice in the Cellar and in the House run thither, and crawl a top of one another; so that you may take them by Handfuls. I have seen the Apothecary of the *Capucins* in this City take ten Pound weight of them at a time.

We see also, that at the time of the Vintage, our Tubs are full of little Flies, which the Smell of the Wine invites, and the Husbandman erroneously thinks are bred by the Tubs.

To these visible and known Facts may be joined the Experiment of Dr. *Andry* in his *Aph. 23.* upon Worms, where he mentions that if in the Beginning of the Small-Pox you bathe the Legs in warm Milk, all the Pock falls there, and the Face is free from it, which comes without doubt from hence, says he, that the Worms which occasion the Pustules of the Small-Pox run to the Milk.

Finally you may assign a Reason from whence it is that pocky Patients feel more Pain in the Night than in the Day; the Worms being
put

put in Motion by the Warmth of the Bed velligate the Membranes and Nerves spread about in the Parts, and cause a greater Pain.

This Phænomenon is not peculiar to the Venereal Disease only, since in the Gout, Rheumatism, obstinate Coughs, &c. the Patients are more tormented at Night than in the Day. *Hippocrates* observes, that all Distempers are more outrageous at Night. *Omnis morbus ad vesperam exacerbatur.*

We believe that this Phænomenon depends upon a greater Compression of the Air in our Hemisphere at Night than in the Day. The Sun by his Heat and Presence rarifies the Hemisphere which he heats and illuminates; this Rarefaction repels the Air, to that where it is dark; and this Compression upon the Surface of our Bodies, heightens the Symptoms of Diseases, either by impeding the Circulation of the Fluids, or by opposing the insensible Transpiration. It is also by this greater Pressure of Air at Night than in the Day, that the Tide rises higher in our Rivers at Night than in the Day, as our antient Sailors have observed. Thus you account for the mechanical Operation of the Cupping-Glass; the Air rarify'd in its Cavity by the Fire condenses the external Air, and makes it press the Glass upon the Place where it is applied. It may also be alledged for a Reason, that the Patient not being diverted by Company, or the Sight of external Objects at Night, is more attentive to his Pain.

Lastly,

Lastly to give a Weight to this Hypothesis, I will make use of a Text of Scripture, *Ecclesiast.* Ch. xix. 3. which the Interpreter explains favourably and literally in behalf of the System proposed. "He that herds with Prostitutes will be a Knave, and the Worms will seize his Body as an Inheritance; he shall be afterwards an Example of Shame, and shall be struck out from the Number of the Living." *Qui se jungit fornicariis erit nequam, putredo et vermes hereditabunt illum, et extolletur in Exemplum majus, et tolletur de numero anima ejus.*

But not to put the Mind under any Constraint in Matters of Physick by spiritual Authority, we maintain that by this System one may account for all the Phænomena relating to the Venereal Disease; this is according to *Aristotle*, all that can be desired, as he explains himself in his *Metaphysics*: "You should not desire a Philosopher to declare precisely how things are, but you should be satisfied if he tells you how they may be, provided his Notion does not imply any Contradiction."

Nevertheless I don't pretend to weaken the Credit, or take from the Esteem People have for the Hypothesis which explains this Disorder from other Principles. We take no other Part in this here proposed, than that we have chosen it and preferred it to the Opinions of those who have spoke of it. We find it established by *Aph.* 24. Sect. 1. in *Andry's Treatise of Worms*. In the Venereal Disorder, there
is

is hardly any Part of the Body, which is not gnawed by little imperceptible Worms, and these Worms occasion the Havock which accompany those sort of Complaints. This Aphorism agrees with the Sentiments of Mr. *Hartsocher*, whom he quotes.

For the rest, this Hypothesis doth not only answer the Symptoms of the Pox, but it squares also with Practice and its Cure, and therefore this Reason should be adopted.

The Hypotheses of Philosophers concerning the World, altho' different, since some make the Earth turn round the Sun, and others the Sun round the Earth, still square all with Navigation, and they give Reasons both in one and the other School, how a Pilot crosses the Sea, and safely arrives at his Port.

Some celebrated Physicians have been of Opinion, that there was no Necessity for any Hypotheses in Physick; that it was as useless to inquire after them, as impossible to penetrate those which fall not under our Senses. *Sydenham* in his Preface says : *Atque ut impossibile plane est ut medicus eas morbi causas ediscat, quæ nullum prorsus cum sensibus habent commercium, ita neque est necesse.* For my Part I think Hypotheses are necessary, both to distinguish the rational Physician, from the Empyrick, and Dogmatist, and to satisfy the Curiosity of the Patient, who seldom is tired with hearing you reason upon his Distemper, and lastly to chime in with the Taste of the Age. I shall quote for this last Purpose a Sentence from

from *Petronius*. *Sic Eloquentiæ magister tamquam piscator nisi eam imposuerit hamulis escam quam scierit appetituros esse pisciculos, sine spe prædæ moratur in scopulo.*

CHAP. III.

Of the Origin and Æra of the Venereal Disease.

AUTHORS are divided in their Opinions concerning the Origin of the Venereal Disorder. Mr. *Fagon* in his Thesis on Tobacco, pretends that *America*, to revenge her Captivity, has made a Present of it to the fierce Conquerors. Others say, that this Distemper had been carried to *America* from some Place of *Guiney*, and that the Negroes, with whom the Pox is very common, have communicated it to the Whites. Many believe that it has only been known since the Siege of *Naples*, under *Charles IX.* King of *France* in 1493. *Primum contagii sui antea ignoti labem communicavit obsidentibus tum Neapolim Gallis.* * And a certain scandalous Chronicle pretends that the Etymology of the Word *Bordel*, Brothel, comes from certain *Bordeloises* (*Bordeaux* Women) who followed the Camp in this Expedition, and that their Tents were called by Abbreviation, *Bordel*. It is certain, that all Nations endeavour to throw the Ignominy of its Original one upon the other. The Northern

* It spread first its Contagion, till then unknown, among the French who then besieged *Naples*.

People call it the *French* Disease; the *French* the *Neapolitan* Disease, and the *English* make it come from *Guyenne*; in short no Nation cares to own its Birth, and all say of it with Indignation:

*Divis te genuit Cottibus horreus
Caucasus.*

But altho' the Place of its Birth were agreed upon, as also the time of its *Æra*; we are still at a Loss to decide in what Manner it was produced, and how this Scourge has been spread about among Mankind. For we must allow that our first Parents were free from it when they came out of the Hands of the Creator; wherefore we must look for its Rise in the succeeding time.

I formerly proposed in some Conferences at Mr. *Rencalme de Lagarenne's*, Doctor and Professor of the Faculty of Physick at *Paris*, and Member of the Royal Academy of Sciences; a System upon the Origin of this Disease, as follows:

This Disease has arisen from the Prostitution of Women, various kinds of Seeds received by the same Womb, of different Characters and Temperature, are disposed by their Heterogeneity to ferment and corrupt there, and to hatch Venereal Worms, in the Manner as Corruption from various Aliments, breeds Worms in the Intestines.

Wil-

Willis observes, that the Seed is the most precious Liquor in the Body of the Animal: *Videntur hic spiritus sal et Sulphur velut in elixirium nobilissimum redigi.* Here the Spirit, Salt and Sulphur seem to be reduced into a most noble Elixir. Besides the Structure of the Testicle analogous, according to the Anatomist, with that of the Brain, the Disorder which its too great Effusion brings on, and those which its Preparation at the Age of Puberty delivers us from, according to *Hippocrates's Aphorism*, speak enough to its Praise, without the Testimony of this Author: *Plurimæ autem passiones &c. Hipp. in Aph.*

If according to Physical Principles, founded upon Experience, the Corruption of the best Things is very bad, *Corruptio optimi pessima*, it cannot seem surprising, that the Corruption of various Seeds may produce and give Birth to Worms hurtful like those which characterise the Pox. For as *Riverius* says, *Quanto enim Semen debitam servans naturam benignitate suæ essentiæ alios humores superat, tanto à debita crassi degener in pejorem et deteriorem venenositatem degenerat.* In as much as Seed preserving its due Nature, exceeds in intrinsical Goodness, all other Humours; so when it degenerates from its due Consistence, it turns to the worst of Poisons.

From this Notion it appears that the Venereal Distemper is as antient as the Prostitution of Women, and we shall take care not to fix its Epoch at the Siege of *Naples*, or the Discovery

covery and Conquest of *America*. To confirm this, we propose the following Reflexions.

1st, If we search the most distant Antiquity, we find that even in *Hippocrates's* time many Symptoms related in his Works, have a great affinity with the Pox. The Leprosy, for Example, of which he speaks in *Sect. 5. de affectionibus*, pag. 35. was nothing else but a confirmed Pox. I treated with the late Mr. *Lamarque*, Surgeon of this Town, three Patients, a *Dantzicker*, and two of this Place, and with Mr. *Perrochon*, a famous Surgeon of this City, a beautiful and lovely young Lady: These four Patients appeared to be Leprous from Head to Foot, and were perfectly cured by Salivation. These Observations persuade me, that the Lepra of the Antients and the Modern Pox are the same thing.

2^{dly}, The Hospitals, which were all about the Christian Countries, subsist no more, since the Use of Mercury has been known, and since it has been used for this Disease with Success; This is also a Proof that the Lepra was a true Pox.

3^{dly}, *Jesus Sirach*, who wrote 200 Years before Christ, the Book called *Ecclesiastes*, which St. *Augustine* praises exceedingly, speaks of a Rottenness contracted from keeping Company with common Prostitutes; which makes me believe that the Pox had made its Appearance in the World, even at that Time.

4^{thly}, *Saliutus*, who lived in the Year 1270, according to *Dodonæus*, makes mention of se-

veral Symptoms of the Pox which were contracted from Whores ; you may read this Observation in *Schenkius. Cap. de Lue Venerea.*

These Observations place the Date of this Disease a vast deal beyond the *Æra* commonly given to it ; it is true it was not so common in those early times, for as it is contagious, it has always gone on increasing, as an Author foretold, who wrote in the fifteenth Century. *Fœcunda progenie sese propagabit ita ut non desitutam sperare, sed latius progressuram timere liceat.* “ It will propagate itself by a filthy
“ Progeny, so that it is not to be hoped that
“ it will cease, but is to be feared will spread
“ farther.”

Besides the Excess and Luxury of Diet have very much heightned this Evil, according to *Etmuller's* Opinion. *Crescentibus luxuriæ & diætæ erratis, quid mirum morbos majore cum furore nos aggredi, veteribus non ita graves.*
“ As the Errors of Luxury and Diet increase,
“ no wonder Diseases attack us with more
“ fury than in former Days.”

We might even from the Principle established above, deduce a probable Reason why the Pox in the Beginning was not so common as at present. The antient Patriarchs had many Wives, *Solomon* for Example. Thus in those days a Man had to do with many Women, and not one Woman with many Men, and from the last way it is we have deduced the Original of the Pox.

Besides

Besides the Multiplicity of Wives occasioned Girls to be married very young, as it is practised among the *Jews* to this Day; they had not time to prostitute themselves, since the permission of Polygamy gave them an opportunity of marrying as soon as they were come to Puberty.

In short, we may look upon the Severity of the Laws against Adultery, as a Barr to the Generation of this Evil. It is well known that in the *Jewish* Land a Woman taken in Adultery was stoned, and *Romulus* Founder of *Rome* had not less attention to the suppressing of Adultery by the Severity of his Laws. *Papon* reports that he gave leave to the Husband or Parents to make the Women convicted of Adultery die what Death they should choose. *Adulterij convictam vir vel cognati ejus uti volent necanto.* But since the Severity of the Laws has cooled upon this Article, the Shame which went along with the Prostitution is become fashionable, and the Disorder authorised by Examples is grown a Sort of Business, which is the most effectual Support of the Venereal Disease.

Thus *Peter* the Great, Emperor of *Russia*, of glorious Memory, exerted his Attention in banishing from *Petersburg* those public Places, and his Orders on this Head surpass those of the Cities under the best Policy, both as to their Severity, and the Diligence of putting them in Execution. This great Man considered that this was the way these Disorders

were multiplied, and that by prohibiting these Places, he did at the same time the Duty of a good Christian, and of a great Politician.

S E C O N D P A R T

Of the Cure of the Venereal Disease.

THE most curious Theories are useless and vain, if they do not point out a Way, and contribute towards the Cure of Diseases. Thus after having spoken of the Theory of the Venereal Disorder, we shall treat of its Cure in the Second Part, which we shall divide into three Chapters. In the first, we shall propose our Method of curing the Venereal Complaint. In the second, we shall examine the Reasons of the Conveniency and Safety which ought to procure the Preference to our Method, and answer the Objections that have been made to us; and in the third, we shall relate some Observations confirming what is advanced in the foregoing Chapters.

C H A P. I.

Containing the Method of curing the Venereal Disease.

WE shall begin with the Gonorrhœa, as being that which presents itself ofteneſt to cure, and which frequently accompanies the other Sorts of this Complaint.

From the first Day that I am sent for, I make them rub the Yard, and chiefly the Canal

nal of the Urethra, the Groin, and neighbouring Parts; or the Parts of Women, with the Ointment of Mercury, revived from Cinnabar, made one upon three. I make them use 2 or 3 Drams of this Ointment, rubbing themselves from the Anus, all along the Canal, to the Glans and Prepuce. The following Day I purge the Patient vigorously with Jalap, from two Scruples to a Dram, according as the Patient is more or less hard to purge. All the Day I make him drink, for his Diet Drink, Spring Water, in which has been boiled Mercury revived from Cinnabar. I continue this several Days, but if the Patient finds himself too much fatigued by the too strong and frequent Evacuations, I give him a Day or two of interval from time to time with respect to the Purges, but I continue the mercurial Friction every Night, in the same Quantity, and the same Places, with the aforesaid Apozem for his constant Drink.

It is surprizing to see what Relief these particular Frictions give to the Patient in Gonorrhœas with a Cordee, when he can make no Water but with exquisite Pain, and is cruelly tormented at Nights, especially in Erections. The first Friction gives him a considerable Relief, the second yet more, and the third commonly makes the Pain cease, and I have met with none yet which the fourth or fifth Friction has not entirely silenced. Those who are in this Case, I hope, will do me the Honour to try upon my Credit and

Experience the Efficacy of this Method, and the Success will prove that I speak Truth.

No Emulsions, Apozems of Nymphæa, Linseed, or Heads of Poppy, or narcotick Syrups, &c. come up to the powerful Effect and sudden Relief which these particular Frictions procure.

I imagine according to my System, that the Venereal Worms, which occasion the Disorder, are destroyed by the Application of the Mercury.

The mercurial Drink tends to the same End; this Remedy I borrowed from *Etmuller*, who proposes it in the Cure of the Gonorrhœa.

And lastly, the Purges given one after another, are recommended by *Sydenham* in this Disease.

By this Method, not only the Pain ceases, but also the Matter changes Colour, it comes less in Quantity, and more fluid, oily, clear and roapy when you touch it with your Fingers, which is a sign that the Cure is at hand.

The most obstinate Gonorrhœas give way to this Method, and one is seldom longer than five or six Weeks in effecting a perfect Cure.

You are not obliged to come to Injections, which ought always to be looked upon as suspicious and dangerous. For either the Venereal Worms are all destroyed or not; in the first case, there is no occasion for Injections or other Astringents, since the running ceases either of itself, or by continuing the same Remedies which have diminished it, and changed its Colour:

Colour: And if they are not all destroyed, you lock them up in the Blood, by stopping up their common Drain, and bring on the Pox.

It must be allowed we often flatter the Patient, who is willing to believe what he likes, when we tell him that the small running which lasts a long while, and which appears like a Pearl in the Morning, upon squeezing the Canal of the Urethra, is only a Weakness of the seminal Vessels, and that nothing is required but to stop it by Astringents: I have observed after *Sydenham*, that this is a Remains of the Disorder not quite cured, and after stopping it with Astringents, Tetters and Venereal Ulcers have appeared in several Parts of the Body.

Such ought to observe a strict Regimen, and abstain from drinking all Wine, from Salt, Spices, any thing high seasoned, and above all, avoid the Company of the fair Sex, either for Copulation or private Conversation, it being of the last Importance to leave the diseased Parts at rest, and not to do them any harm, by giving them Motions repugnant to the Cure.

The running being entirely stopped, and all the Symptoms removed, I make them commonly take for some Days a Basin of Milk every Morning, to restore that Balsam which the Blood may have lost by frequent purging.

The Venereal Buboës in the Groin, and which are often accompanied with a Gonorrhœa, Phymosis, and Paraphymosis, are cured

the same way ; provided there is no Pus formed in the Swellings, for in that case, it is impossible to avoid opening them.

I make them shave off the Hair, and increase the Quantity of the Ointment to half an Ounce ; I make them rub the Groin, the Testicles, and Parts in either Sex ; I purge every Day, making use of the mercurial Water, and take great care to repeat every Night those Frictions, and to extend them to the neighbouring Parts, continuing them and the Purges a long time. By these three Remedies, I find the Buboës melt away, the Phymosis, Paraphymosis, and Chancres disappear, and the Patient recovers his former Health again.

This Method is a thousand times preferable to repeated application of Cupping Glasses upon Buboës, to painful Incisions to lay them open, and to bring them to a copious Suppuration, which has been looked upon as a Crisis of the Pox.

You not only save the Patient Pain and Cutting, but also those shameful and deep Scars which remain after their opening, and which all the Art of Surgery cannot prevent. These Cicatrices may in some manner be compared to those of the Flower-de-luce.

Et sectas inhoneſto vulnere partes.

And Parts disfigured by dishonest Wounds.

You prevent also the Destruction of the inguinal Glands, which Nature has not placed in
in

in the Groin in vain; for either they are melted and destroyed by Suppuration, or their Use is abolished by deep Scars remaining after their opening. But by this Method now proposed, you preserve all the Parts entire.

When the Tumours in the Groin are much inflamed, or when the Tumour seizes one or both Testicles with Pain and Pulsation threatening Suppuration, I bleed the Patient copiously, and repeat it according to the Age of the Person, and as there is occasion, 'till the Inflammation seems no more inclinable to suppurate. I fly quickly to Frictions and Purges which make the Pain cease after the third time, as will be seen in our Observations.

The Dose of the Ointment ought to be proportioned to the Number and Greatness of the Complaints. I am not satisfied with applying it only upon the Parts aggrieved, I rub it in upon the neighbouring Places, and inner Parts of the Thighs, in proportion as the Disorder is considerable, I imploy it to six Drams, and even an Ounce of the Ointment, as appears from the Observations.

But when the Patient has the Pox, and the Venereal Worms are dispersed all over the Body, the Business is to increase the Medicine to destroy them, and to redouble the Number of Frictions, that the Mercury by passing often through every Part, may get the Master of them, and procure their total Extermination.

It is therefore customary to bleed and purge the Patient, to bath him, to make him drink Whey, and to administer the Frictions afterwards, beginning in the Extremities, and coming gradually to the general Frictions, 'till the Salivation comes on, which increases by degrees to 3 or 4 Pints in 24 Hours. It commonly goes 8 or 10 Days increasing, it is as long at the height, and something longer going off. This is the Method commonly practised, and which we endeavour to reform.

We adopt the preliminary Preparation of the Bath, although *Sydenham* rejects it. For as the Business is to procure a capital Evacuation, and to change the Serum of the Blood, wherein the Venereal Worms commonly swim, there can be no harm in giving Fluidity to the Juices, according to the Aphorism of *Hippocrates*; *Corpora cum quis purgare voluerit ea fluxilia reddere oportet*, "If you would purge Bodies, you ought to render them fluid."

Now the Bath procures this Fluidity to the Blood and Juices, because the Particles of the Water insinuate themselves through the absorbent Pores, and dilute the Blood and Lymph. You will be convinced of the admission of the aqueous Particles, if you reflect, 1st, That if you come into a Bath thirsty, a quarter of an Hour after you are no more so, which must proceed from the Intromission of aqueous Particles. 2^{dly}, You perceive a Relaxation of the Muscles which makes you feel

a Weariness, which is occasioned from the entering of the aqueous Particles, relaxing the muscular Fibres. 3dly, I have had about the Bath a Curiosity analogous to that of *Sanctorious* upon insensible Transpiration, altho' less useful and advantageous in Practice. I weighed a Man before he went into the Bath, and found that he was heavier when he came out again. Now this Increase of Weight, can proceed from nothing but the Intromission of the fine anguillary Particles of Water. 4thly, The surprising Relief the Bath gives in the nephritic Cholic, cannot be explained any other ways than by the Intromission of the very fine Particles of the Water, which relax the crisped Fibres, and calm the Pain suddenly.

You must not expect that Water taken at the Mouth should produce the same effect. For altho' Water is a homogeneous Liquid, nevertheless some Particles of it are thinner and finer than others, and it is these which separated and filtrated through the Pores, without any Mixture of Air, produce the great Effects which we experience from the Bath in Practice.

There is a great deal of Air mixt with Water, of which you may be easily convinced by the following Experiment, which I saw made at *Paris* in the College of *quatre Nations*, in the Class of Philosophy. You put a Tumbler with Water under the Bell of the Air Pump; after the first Strokes of the Pump you see the Water bubble, the Bubbles rise from

from the bottom to the top. After you have pumped as much as possible, the Water in the Tumbler diminishes near one third, by the coming out of these Bubbles, which are nothing else but the Air mixt with the Water, not confined any longer now by the Pressure of the external Air, and whose spring unbends to get away in Bubbles. If you fill a glass Tube half full with this Water, and Seal it hermetically, it makes a Noise when you shake it as if it was solid, or like Quicksilver.

We are therefore of Opinion, that Patients who have had the Pox long, should be prepared by the Bath and drinking of Whey. But in recent ones, when the Patients are full of Juice, the Bath is not necessary, or at least need not be used long, because the Blood is sufficiently diluted. And when the Patient is reduced to a great Weakness, and is not able to go through these preliminary Preparations, in this Case we are obliged to have recourse to the Frictions quickly; the proof of which you'll see in our Observations.

After this, I say, I change nothing of the antient Method but the place of Evacuation, and that instead of raising a Salivation, I bring on a Flux of the Belly. The same Preparations, the same Frictions, even stronger and in greater Number, but instead of a painful stinking Flux of the Mouth, I substitute purging, without any Fatigue, Pain, or Danger, which I stop or moderate as I please, and which destroys the Symptoms of the Pox,

I

and

and the Pox itself more securely than Salivation. The terrible Treatment from the Duration of the Pain, the Violence and Danger of its Event, humbling at the same time the Patient by the Shame of a suspicious Retreat, is changed by the Flux of the Belly into a Treatment safe, easy, and gentle, like a Tertian Fever.

The whole Secret consists in keeping the Patient's Body open by Clysters of Decoction of Senna, and the Pulp of Cassia, before the Frictions are administred. By this Precaution, it happens, that the Mercury finding the intestinal Glands relaxed, and the Body open, its Evacuation tends that way more readily, as the Place where it finds the least Resistance; it runs off rather by the Alvus than the Mouth. When I find the Looseness doth not answer the Number of the Frictions, nor the Quantity of Mercury I employed, I purge the Patient with Powder of Jalap, and procure copious Stools which secure the Mouth. Whilst the Looseness is going on, a Friction doth the Office of a Purge, and in proportion as they are reiterated, so the Flux of the Belly revives, and when it slackens or stops, I have recourse to the Clysters and Purges of Jalap, which I follow so long, till by the Cessation of the Symptoms, by the Quantity of Mercury I have employed, and the Abundance of the Evacuations, I am thoroughly persuaded that the Venereal Leaven, how great soever it be, is entirely drained off, and that the Serum
of

of the Blood is changed, and has made room for new Juices.

You'll say, perhaps, that I make use of the same Method for all those Disorders, and that I confine an extensive *Materia Medica*, which has been made use of at all times to three Remedies, viz. the Ointment, the Decoction of Mercury and Jalap; that the different Complaints affecting different Parts ought to be treated by different Remedies, and by Methods on which whole Books have been composed.

I answer, 1st, That as we have laid down above, that all these Disorders differ only from greater to less, and in Proportion as various Parts of the Body are attacked; but the Cause in all the different Sorts is the same, and therefore it was just and reasonable to make Use of the same Method and Remedy, barring the increasing or diminishing of the Dose, according to the Violence of the Symptoms, and the greater or lesser Number of the Sorts of Complaint. 2^{dly}, That without pretending to say any Harm of the Methods which have been practised, I am satisfied with making it appear that this which I propose is safe and secure, and that the Success answers to a Miracle. 3^{dly}, That the Method, tho' simple, is not the worse for that. *Hujus laus est mira simplicitas veritatis imago.* "Its Encomium is a wonderful Simplicity, the Image of Truth." If you consider, as *Galileus* says, the Works of Nature, you'll find that she makes use of simple Means in all her Operations, as may be seen from

from the flying of Birds, and swimming of Fish; thus a Physician should imitate Nature, and prefer the simplest Methods answering the Indication as the most natural. In short, it is not the great Number of Medicines, nor their pompous Preparation which doth Honour to Physick, but the curing of Diseases as Sydenham proposes. *Etenim Medicinæ dignitas atque pompa non in formularum concinnitate et elegantia, sed in morborum curatione posita est.*

I heard the late Dr. Enguard, a famous Physician of Paris, make use of an Expression which I always remembred from the time I followed him at his visiting the Sick at the *Hotel-Dieu* at Paris, *Medicus paucorum remedium.* "A Physician with few Medicines." And we see *Hippocrates* in his Works, proposes very few Remedies, and not much compounded. *Hippocratis pauperies contra morbos in excubiis posita.* "*Hippocrates's* Poverty is placed "as a Watch upon the Diseases." And I have often compared 7 or 8 of the best Medicines in Physick, to 7 or 8 Tones in Musick, the harmonious Combination of which composes all sorts of Tunes, and the most melodious Concerts, through the Skill of an able Musician.

C H A P. II.

Containing the Reasons which prove that this Method is more safe and convenient than the old, with an Answer to the Objections.

THIS Chapter will be divided into three Articles, under the first of them we shall propose the Reasons, proving that the Method laid down is more convenient than the old one. Under the second, we shall make it appear that this is safer than the other: And under the third, we shall answer the Objections which have been raised by my Friends, and sometimes in Consultation against this Method.

The FIRST ARTICLE.

Containing the Reasons, proving that the Method here proposed is more convenient than the old.

AND first, You secure the Patient from Danger, by carrying off the Evacuations by Stool, whereas you expose him by pushing on the Salivation. The Pain has often brought Patients to the last Extremity, the Swelling of the Salival Glands, of the Tongue, Muscles of the Fauces, and their Inflammation sometimes communicated to those of the *Larinx*, have rendered the Patient incapable of swallowing or breathing, and by loss of Strength, want of Sustenance, and Breath, many have died. “ How many have we seen perish in
the

“ the Hands of the most experienced Artists.
“ I have seen some of the most skilful, send
“ Patients away from their Houses in the
“ Agony of Death, to keep the Reproach of
“ the Funeral Ceremony from their Doors.” I
may even say, that few Courses have past with-
out some Accident, and that in many the
Physicians and Surgeons have been frightened as
well as the Patients whom they have been oblig-
ed to bleed, to give Purges, *aurum fulminans*,
&c. You run no such risque in working it off
by Stool, the Patient, the Physician, and Sur-
geon rest all very easy. The Intestines are ac-
customed to receive and expel the Impurities
of the Body made partly for that purpose, and
capable of containing them in a Canal long,
large, and always open; they don't give so
much Uneasiness as the Mouth, which was not
designed for any such Evacuation, or to serve
for a common Drain. This only Reason to
avoid the Danger, ought to give the preference
to the Method we propose to the Prejudice of
the old one.

Secondly, You save the Patient a great deal
of Pain, which by its Quickness and Duration
enervates the Courage of the most intrepid; and
I can say that I have never seen more than
one who did not lose Patience before he came
to the end of the Salivation. This made *Fer-
nelius* say, *Credi potest nimium vivendi cupidos,
qui mori non maluerint, quam hujusmodi medica-
tionem perferre. Levius enim est ægrotare quam
sanari.* “ We may say that they are too

E

“ desirous

“ desirous of life, who would rather be thus
“ cured than die, for it is less painful to be
“ sick than to be cured.” Indeed, as they
suffer 25 Days Pain without Relaxation, or
Sleep, and without being able to swallow any
thing but Broth, and Diet Drink, with a ter-
rible Stink, is it not gaining considerably, if you
save the Patient a Torture which tyrannizes
over Life during a Month or longer, and
makes him purchase it at a dear rate? Is it
not more eligible to hurry off by 5 or 6 co-
pious Stools in the space of an Hour, and
without Pain, that which could not have been
evacuated by the Salival Glands in less than a
Day, and with inconceivable Torment?

I have often reflected, that the violent Pain
seemed to be a convincing Proof, that Nature
made use of the detestable Evacuation of Sali-
vation only by force, and you may judge of
the Violence of the Pain from the Sensibility
of the Mouth, and the Parts composing it. Be-
sides such a Pain in the Neighbourhood of the
Brain seems to threaten the Soul very nearly,
and to throw it into the greatest Consternation.

Thirdly, You not only preserve the Patient's
Life in safety, and keep him from Pain, but
also you preserve his Teeth during this Course,
by the Flux of the Belly, whereas by Saliva-
tion, the Teeth sometimes fall out, or are
loosened, and almost always grow Black, and
the Gums wear away: And every Body knows
what Importance they are of for the Preser-
vation of Health and Life itself. *Hippocrates*
in

in his *Aph.* measures the Length of Life by the Number of Teeth: *Qui plures dentes habent illi longæ vitæ futuri sunt.* " Those who " have a great Number of Teeth will be long " lived." And both Reason and Experience shew us in all the Systems invented to explain the Digestion of Aliments, of what Utility the Teeth are to forward it, without mentioning the other Uses, and the great Ornament they are to Mankind, especially the Fair Sex, and the Method we propose do them no injury at all.

Fourthly, You avoid by this Course the deep Scars succeeding after Ulcers occasioned by Salivation, and which form sometimes strong Seams, hindring the opening of the Mouth, which must sometimes be cut after the Course. I have seen two Persons, who after Salivation could not well open their Mouths.

Fifthly, You run no risque of leaving the Patient with a perpetual Salivation, which sometimes all the Remedies have not been able to prevent, and which is owing to the tearing asunder of the excretory Canals of the Salival Glands. And most Salivations which have been copious, leave a troublesome Spitting some Months, with an ill Scent, which make Persons of the Profession know that such have past through the grand Remedy.

Sixthly, You shorten the time, which sometimes is precious to the Patient, since he need not keep his Chamber but 25 or 30 Days, and that he may even go abroad in fair Weather,

as we shall shew in our Observations; and that his Mouth being in good Order, he may eat as he pleases, and recruit his Spirits. But after Salivation, a long time is required to cure the Sensibility of the Mouth and Tongue, which stript of their Scarf Skin, the *Papillæ nervosæ* remain uncovered, and consequently exposed to Pain, 'till the thin Skin is grown again.

Seventhly, You save the Patient's Money; for as in the Management which I propose, the Patient is able to eat and drink, you save the Expence of Broth and Jelly Broths, which are much dearer than common Food. Besides, you spoil no Linen which Salivation destroys considerably.

Eighthly, You entirely secure the Reputation of the Patient, you save him the Shame of a suspicious Absence, since he may do the Business in his own House without any Body's knowing of it, and he may even receive Visits without raising any Suspicion. His Tongue and Speech are free, he takes Nourishment without Pain and with Pleasure. One may even keep in the dark Persons of the Profession; a Looseness without Fever is equivocal, and may proceed from common Causes, as well as from the Operation of Mercury carried off by Stool.

In short, I make use of this last Reason for its Conveniency, that by this Method Physick reclaims a Disorder of great Extent and Importance, which the Surgeons had ingrossed to treat in their Houses, and which Apprentices

tices who had administred Frictions under their Masters, thought themselves in a Capacity of curing. What an Injustice, says an *English* Author, that an internal Distemper, if any there is, which penetrates to the Marrow of the Bones, should be ranked among the external ones, because some Symptoms appear externally? But by this Method it returns to the Profession of Physick.

SECOND ARTICLE.

Containing Proofs that there is more Assurance of a perfect Cure in this Method than the other.

THE Parallel we have drawn in Behalf of the Conveniency, and which seems advantageous to me, in favour of the Method proposed, would be of little Consequence, if we could not make it appear that the Patient is more sure of a Cure, and quicker dispatched by this Method than the other; which we shall endeavour to prove to a Demonstration by the following Reasons.

1st. It is advanced as a certain and indisputable Fact, that there are no Practitioners versed and experienced in curing the Pox, but have seen sometimes the Patient cured without Salivation, by a Diarrhœa only, occasioned by the Frictions. This Experience agrees with the Doctrine of almost all the Authors who have wrote on this Subject: Notwithstanding all Remedies and care to stop the Diarrhœa, and to raise a Salivation all has been in vain; the in-

testinal Glands have prevailed over the salival, and discharged in abundance, and without Pain, that which could not have past off by the excretory Ducts of the salival Glands, but gradually and with inconceivable Pain; and at last the Symptoms have disappeared, and the Patient has been cured. We shall relate some Instances hereof in the next Chapter.

Now if we can be sure of a Cure when the Evacuation happens by Stool; if the Physician and Surgeon wish the Patient joy when Nature takes this Course, why should it not be permitted to invite her that way? *Galen* in his Commentary upon the 27th *Aph.* of *Hipp. Sect.* 4. says, that a Physician ought to give Vomits in long Fluxes of the Belly, when Nature doth not bring on Vomiting of itself, because a Physician should imitate the good Operations of Nature. *Eorum quæ a natura recte fiunt decet Medicum imitatore esse.* Why therefore shall it not be allowed to invite Nature to evacuate the Effect of the Frictions by Stool, since the Experience of many skilful Practitioners proves that it has been salutary, and since the Reasons alledged in the preceding Article should make us give the Preference to this Evacuation to the Prejudice of Salivation.

2dly. Anatomy shews us that the salival and intestinal Glands are of the same Structure, and consequently they must have the same Use, placed in the same Canal, with this Difference only, that the salival Glands are at the Extre-

mity, that is to say, at the Entry of the *Oesophagus*, and the others dispersed throughout the long Circumvolutions of the Intestines. We must therefore believe, that they are for the same Use; that they separate the same sort of Lymph, and consequently it must be equal whether the Evacuation is made upwards or downwards. Moreover, when the Evacuation is made by Salivation, the Cure is not so certain, since the Broth or Ptisan they swallow mix with part of the Venom filtered through the salival Glands, and that the Carcasses of the Venereal Worms filled with Ovula, which the Mercury has not been able to penetrate, return into the Blood by the way of the Chyle, and may after Salivation breed again, and renew the Pox, as *Palmarius* has observed; whereas when the Evacuation is made downwards, there is no fear of this Accident.

3dly, What proves invincibly, that the Lympha coming from the salival Glands is of the same Nature with that of the Intestines, or rather the very same, is, that as soon as the Flux of the Belly ceases, the salival Glands swell; and when the Looseness returns, the salival Glands grow less, as may be inferr'd from the Text of Hippocrates, *Exinanita alvus ex facie ducit*, (Discharges of the Belly draw from the Face.) Now since Evacuation by Stool depresses the Salivation, and as in Return Salivation locks up the Belly, as these Evacuations increase and diminish at the Expence of each other; so that I have often compared them to

two Beams of a Scale, one rising as the other falls ; these certain Facts known by all Practitioners, prove indisputably that the same Matter which furnishes the Flux of the Belly, supplies also Salivation ; wherefore it is not material to the Safety of the Cure, which way the Evacuation is made.

4thly, We have two Reasons drawn from Anatomy, which prove that the Evacuation by Stool is more secure than that made by Salivation.

The first from the great Number of intestinal Glands, which Mr. *Duverney* in his private Courses, has shewn us by Bundles in the small Guts, and in the greater less in Number indeed, but much bigger. The salival Glands, both the superior and inferior, cannot be compared, nor equalled with the intestinal ; one may therefore with more Solidity depend upon these than the others, and so much the rather, since Nature has placed them in the intestinal Canal designed chiefly for the Evacuation of the Impurities of the Body, and that we follow by forcing through by Stools the Will and Intention of Nature.

The second we take from the Distribution of the Arteries in the Bowels, and salival Glands. Two considerable Branches supply the Intestines. Mr. *Duverney*, in his private Courses calls them *arteria mesenteria superior & inferior*. Two thin Threads of an Artery from the external Carotid, supply the salival Glands. The arterial Branches which go to the Intestines,

tines, are of so considerable a Size, that they carry thither almost one Quarter of the Blood which is distributed by the *Arteria descendens*: Their prodigious Ramifications inosculating in form of an Arch, must make us think that Nature has not poured so great a Quantity of Blood into the Intestines for their bare Nourishment. For upon examining their thin and fine Substance, you'll be convinced that so great a Quantity of Blood was not requisite for their Nourishment, since less would have more than sufficed for that Purpose. Nature must therefore have designed, by making so much Blood pass into the Intestines, that it should receive there some Depuration in the numerous Glands with which they are covered: You cannot form any Judgment like this from the little Thread-like Branches of the external Carotid, which run to the salival Glands. We therefore do not answer well the Views and Intentions of Nature, if we prefer the Depuration that may be effected by some small Branches of an Artery, to that which you may expect from the considerable Tubes in the Intestines, especially when a general Depuration is aimed at; since otherwise Nature herself often shews us plainly, by the abundant Stools following upon the first Frictions, that she loves that Evacuation as the shortest, surest, and less fatiguing. And you find in reality and literally in this Method of curing the Pox, the three Conditions which the Maxims of the Schools recom-

recommend to us, *Cito, tuto, jucunde*, "quickly, safely, pleasantly"

5thly, Those who, when they see a Diarrhœa follow immediately after the first Frictions, instead of encouraging it, put all their Skill to work to stop it, by anodyne and narcotick Clysters, or by Emeticks to call back the Evacuations upwards, err greatly against the *Aphor. of Hippocrates, Quo natura vergit eo ducere oportet per loca naturæ magis commoda.* "You must lead the way Nature tends thro' the Passages most commodious to Nature." Now what way can we find more convenient than a large Canal always open, placed in the middle of the Body like a Sewer, within reach to receive all Impurities, which brings on no Uneasiness or Danger, which interrupts in no wise the Reception of Nourishment, Mastication, Swallowing and Digestion, whereas Salivation overthrows these important Functions of the Body?

Sixthly, It is safer to treat Poxes, accompanied with habitual Gonorrhœas, by the Flux of the Belly, than Salivation. This last, altho' copious and abundant as possible, doth not carry off the Gonorrhœa, as *Sydenham* observes in his Treatise on the Pox. *Observandum est autem quod licet salivatio remedia alia qualiacunque ea fuerint in extirpanda lue confirmata longe exuperet; Gonorrhœam tamen cum lue conjunctam neutiquam valet sanare, nec sistetur illa hac jam penitus devicta,* "But it is to be observed, that tho' Salivation is much better
" for

“ for the curing of a confirm’d Pox, than any
 “ other Medicine whatever, yet it cannot cure
 “ a Gonorrhœa, when it accompanies the Pox,
 “ nor will that stop, when this is quite cured.”
 And daily Experience evinces the Truth of
 this Author’s Doctrine, as he says himself,
 after having treated the Pox you have still the
 Gonorrhœa to cure. *Quoties igitur lues Vene-*
rea et Gonorrhœa una stabulantur, vel ante Sa-
livationem vel ea jam peracta, Gonorrhœæ cura-
tio tentanda est, quod et tutius fit, me judice, et
facilius post salivationem, cum luem habens comi-
tem Gonorrhœa ægrius dometur, quæ vero à præ-
gressa salivatione quadantenus subacta fuit mi-
nori negotio expugnetur. “ When the Pox and
 “ a Gonorrhœa are lodged together, the Cure
 “ of the Gonorrhœa is to be attempted before
 “ the Salivation, or when it is over, but in
 “ my Opinion it is safer and better done after
 “ Salivation. For being accompanied with the
 “ Pox it is more difficultly cured, but after Sa-
 “ livation being somewhat tamed, it is usu-
 “ ally cured with less trouble.” But by the
 Method we propose, you cure not only the
 Pox, but also the Gonorrhœa, as I have expe-
 rienced many times.

The happy Success of Purgatives in the
 Gonorrhœa, is established by the Doctrine of
Sydenham in his aforesaid Treatise. *Etenim*
Catharsis hic instar omnium est, atque in hoc
affectu, si in alio quopiam asseritur quod qui bene
mundificat bene sanat. “ For purging doth here
 “ every thing, and in this Disease, if it may
 “ be

" be asserted in any other, he that cleanses
 " well, heals well." The Reason he gives for
 the Efficacy of purging in curing the Gonorrhœa, is that you evacuate by Purgatives either
 the Humours which cause the Illness, or that
 you make a Diverſion of the Juices that might
 feed it. *In remedijs catharticijs quantum buc uf-*
que uſu comperimus curationis omnis Cardio ver-
titur, quorum auxilio vel educitur humor pec-
cans, vel procuratur diverſio ſuccorum natura-
lium: qui aliter hoſti in pabulum cederent. And
 truly we have obſerved in Practice, that the
 powerful Diverſion made by a copious and
 laſting Diarrhœa, cures any Gonorrhœa what-
 ever; ſince by attracting by the Stools the
 Matter which ſupplies the Gonorrhœa, you
 give an opportunity to the Parts of recovering
 their Elafiicity.

Seventhly, In extreme Emaciation, as ſome-
 times Patients are who have waited too long,
 and are not in a Condition to ſupport the Sa-
 livation, Diet, Watching, Pain, &c. Purging
 is much ſafer in this caſe than a Salivation,
 ſince during theſe Evacuations by the *Alvus*,
 we give Nouriſhment; they ſleep and recruit
 their Forces, and we have it in our power to
 ſtop and moderate the Purging much better
 than the Salivation.

Eighthly, When the Palate, Throat, Uvula,
 Noſe, and other Parts thereabout are ulcerated,
 you expoſe the Patient, by forcing the Hu-
 mours to the Parts affected, either to choak,
 or to diſfigure him for ever. *Galen* forbids
 you

you to fling the Humours upon the disordered Parts. *Non licet humores urgere versus partem affectam.* For as the ulcerated Parts are weakened, great Disorder and unhappy Accidents ensue when you push the Medicine and Evacuation that way, as you'll see from our Observations.

I have seen a Patient of Distinction, who had the Uvula almost eaten away by an old Pox, with an Ulcer in his Throat; The Frictions were administered him with all possible Precaution, the Salivation came on, which caused so great a Disorder in his Throat, that when he was going to swallow, part of the Drink fell down the *Trachea*, and made him cough 'till he brought up what was gone down to his Lungs; he became hectic, and died in the Operation of the Remedy.

9thly, We introduce, as a Reason, the Encomium some Authors have given to the Flux of the Belly. *Hipp. Fernelius*, and *Willis* assure us, that the Effects of purging in almost all Distempers are safe and salutary. *Etenim purgatio morbos delet innumeros. Bagl. Prax. med.* "For purging carries off innumerable Diseases." And the frequent Use we make of it in almost all Disorders has occasioned a French Comedian to joke upon us on this head. Should this grand Remedy lose its Efficacy and Reputation in the Pox only? The known and incontestable Effects it produces in the Gonorrhœa are a sure Earnest of what it promises in the Pox, since they only

only differ from one another, from greater to less, as we have shewn in the first Part.

Lastly, We add to all these Reasons of its Conveniency and Safety, which we have alledged to procure the Preference to our Method, that it not only concerns the Patients in particular, as we have shewn, but also the Publick in general. It is certain, that such an easy Method, supported by Authority and Practice, would be capable of extinguishing or at least diminishing considerably, a Scourge grown very common, especially in great Cities. The Facility of this Method, the little Expence and security from Danger would engage an infinite number of Persons to get themselves cured, who altho' distempered, continue upon all Occasions to live in Debauchery, and to spread the Infection more and more. It is often fear of Pain and Danger, or the Shame of a suspicious Retirement, and the enormous Prices the Surgeons exact now a days to treat Patients at their Houses, which makes them continue in this miserable Situation. Others neglecting Cases that are doubtful, venture upon Matrimony, with some unhappy Remains of the Adventures of their Youth; nothing so common in Practice, as to see daily the fatal Consequences resulting therefrom. Such a one's Wife has a *Gonorrhœa*, which is baptized with the honest Name of the Whites (not that I pretend there are no Whites without a *Gonorrhœa*) but it must be also allowed many of them are suspicious, and if without
Prejudice

Prejudice their Original was traced, many would be found to be true Venereal Gonorrhœas.

There are two Signs by which we may distinguish the Whites, which Authors call *fluor Albus* from Gonorrhœas. The first is at the Time of the Menses the Whites stop, whereas the Gonorrhœa runs all along with the Menses. *Baglivi Prax. med.* The second is the Difference of the Colour; the Gonorrhœa being Green, or at least yellow, but the Whites appear white and clear, without heat or burning of Urine.

Besides the Children born from Persons who have a Gonorrhœa are commonly covered with Pustules, they have Ulcers and Scrophulous Glands. These Symptoms are often Signs of an hereditary Pox, which People might secure themselves from, if persuaded of the Solidity of the Method I propose, they would examine themselves seriously before Marriage, and take those Precautions which the Facility of the Operation, its Safety, and the Cheapness might engage them to.

THIRD ARTICLE.

Containing the Objections which have been made against this Method.

OBJECTION I.

IT is to be feared that the pocky Venom, joined with the Mercury, and brought to the

the Intestines, will ulcerate them, and make there such havock as it doth in the Mouth, and occasion griping and bloody Stools which might prove mortal.

I answer, that this Accident doth not happen, and that even it is not to be feared for the following Reasons. *1st,*) The Intestines in their internal Surface are lined with a Mucus which resembles the Snot of the Nose, placed by Nature in their Cavity, to arm them against the Acrimony of the Bile and the other Humours, and to facilitate the Descent of the Excrements. This Mucus also secures them against the Impressions, either from the Mercury, or the Virulency it brings along with it. But the Case is different in the Mouth, there is no such Mucus, and for this Reason it is that Mercury grafts there such deep Ulcers. The Tongue, the Roof of the Mouth, the Gums, all suffer cruelly; and to prevent these Disorders, it is prudent to bring on the Evacuations by Stool. *2^{dly},*) The Canal of the Intestines is long and wide, and always open, and things pass through them quickly without making any stay there; whereas at the Mouth they go off very gently, and make very strong and violent Impressions. *3^{dly},*) Experience proves that this case doth not happen, that by the help of due Preparations in lean and saline Complexions, the Poison how strong soever, passes off without offending the Bowels; and that in most Constitutions full of Juices, even these preliminary Preparations

4

have

have not been necessary, as we have experienced many times: You'll see Proofs of it in our Observations.

O B J E C T I O N II.

THE famous *Sydenham* condemns the Looseness which happens after the first Frictions, and looks on it as an Obstacle to the Cure, and instead of favouring it, he recommends to stop it by the help of liquid Laudanum, and other Anodynes. I answer, that *Sydenham* in his way of reasoning looked with a suspicious Eye upon a Looseness, as being an absolute hindrance to a Salivation, which he thought the only Remedy for the Pox, as he says himself, *Utpote quæ Salivationi tantummodo cedere soleat*. "As which is
"wont to yield to Salivation only." And he has observed that the Salivation did not appear 'till the Diarrhœa was stop'd: The Looseness, says he, being at length stop'd, the Salivation, which before scarce appeared, usually proceeds well. But if this celebrated Author had been sure that the Pox had been well cured by a Looseness, as is attested by many Books and Practitioners who have seen perfect Cures performed, tho' a Salivation could never be raised, there is room to believe from his Integrity, of which we see many Proofs in his Works, that he would have altered his Opinion. Besides, *Sydenham* himself in his Works, and even in his Treatise on the Pox, is far from pretending that no Additions are to be made to

F

his

his Observations; on the contrary, he exhorts all Physicians who shall come after him, to apply themselves to contemplate Nature, to study her Motions, and to follow her religiously, rather than adhere to Hypotheses, which even in his time overrun Physick. His Modesty made him say that he had done nothing but shew the way to draw Indications from Observation, and to adapt the Systems to the Cure, and not the Cure to the Systems.

O B J E C T I O N III.

BY throwing Mercury off by Stool you render it useless, since you give it no time to circulate with the Mass of Blood.

I answer, that this Objection is as much against the Salivation as the Method I propose, since the Mercury runs off equally by the Salivation as by the Looseness; but that one has an infinite Advantage by being able to throw in as much Mercury as one pleases by this Method. We shall make it appear in our Observations, that we have made use of to 24 Ounces of Ointment in 24 Frictions, which no one dare venture in a Salivation, since *Lemeri* in his Treatise on Chymistry fixes it to five; thus the new Mercury replaces abundantly that which is come away by Stool, and produces a total Destruction and Evacuation of the Venereal Vermin.

O B

O B J E C T I O N IV.

IT is thought it would be more convenient to make the Mercury act by Extinction, by administering Frictions from time to time (to prevent Salivation) as is practised (at *Montpellier*) than to bring on any Evacuation.

We have already answered this Objection, and given the Reason why the Mercury given by Extinction, doth not often succeed: We can affirm it, that we have seen several that had been missed by the Method of Extinction, who were perfectly cured by ours.

Yet to do Justice to Truth, I have seen great Effects produced from Frictions by Extinction, that is to say at Intervals; and I make use of them sometimes for particular Reasons, which I shall mention in the following Chapter.

C H A P. III.

Some Observations upon the Pox.

THIS Chapter shall be divided into three Articles. In the first we shall begin with the Observations, which made me think of evacuating the Effect of Mercury by Stool; and we shall propose a certain Number of Cures done by this Method, which confirm what we have advanced above. In the second, we shall relate the Particulars of certain Observations made by the antient Method, and which have appeared to me worthy of Remark.

mark. In the third we shall set down some Cures performed by our Method in other Disorders besides the Venereal Disease, and which did not proceed from a Venereal Leaven.

F I R S T A R T I C L E.

Some Observations which made me hit upon this Method, and some Cures performed by it.

I. O B S E R V A T I O N.

A Beautiful young Lady of a superior Genius, and exemplary Prudence, was courted by a young Gentleman, an only Son and very rich, who had neither Father nor Mother, and whose Endowments and Qualifications of Body and Mind were as extensive as his Riches. This young Gentleman has owned to me that he had then no other Design but to pass away his time agreeably in this young Lady's Company, 'till the fine Season should come on, and the time fit to depart for *Paris*, where he had resolved to strike up his Tent. But the good Conduct of the Lady lately come from the Convent, and the prudent Advice of her Mother, made the young Gentleman so amorous, that the Affair became serious, and he thought of marrying her. The young Lady seemed not to allow him but with Difficulty, and after several Refusals, liberty of asking her in Marriage; nevertheless, when she saw that he was in earnest, she made a Vow, in case the Match was accomplished, to go on Foot from the
Borders

Borders of the *Garone*, to the Chapel of *Notre Dame de Verdelaïs*, to pay her Devotions. The Marriage was consummated, and the very first Days before the wedding Feast was over, the young Woman had a violent Gonorrhœa, and her Parts full of little Ulcers. The Husband being interrogated, confess'd he had contracted at *Bordeaux* some Infection, for which he had been treated slightly by his Barber; it was a running, which after some Bottles of Ptisane, had been stop'd by Injections. The Body, and especially his Shoulders, were covered with pocky Pustules, of the Colour and Nature as *Sydenham* mentions, and it was agreed in a Consultation that both of them had the Pox.

I have seen parallel Cases happen to young People, who had the Misfortune to be too soon their own Masters, and who had Money at Discretion: This precious Commodity is very dangerous in the Hands of those who are at an Age when the Passions are strong, and Reason weak. Wherefore Nature has hid it deep in the Bowels of the Earth; foreseeing, like a good Mother, that her Children would abuse it, in the same manner as a prudent Nurse hides from her little Ones hurtful Instruments, that they may not make use of them to their Prejudice.

To return to our married Couple, they were both condemned to pass through the grand Remedy, *viz.* Friction, and Salivation. They were both prepared at the same time by Bleeding, Purging, Baths, Whey, &c. they were in

the same Room in two different Beds. The young woman saw from hers the Frictions administered upon her Husband first, which she refused to undergo in her turn, saying, she would sooner die than thus to expose herself naked to two Surgeon's Apprentices; and all the wise and judicious Remonstrances my Colleague, who saw these two Patients with me, could make her, were fruitless that Day. We advised to let her Governante rub her, to which she consented. The first and second Frictions had no effect, and we judged from what the Husband told us, that the Governante was not skilled to administer the Remedy. We advised her to consent that the Surgeon himself, at whose House they were, should be present to direct the Governante in the Operation, who on account of his great Age was not to be regarded, to which she consented. The Surgeon seeing that she did not do it well, went to Work, and did her this Service, which fatigued him much; the next Day, at the time when she thought he would have continued his Operation, he brought his two Apprentices with him whom she now suffered to rub her, and who continued so to do without any Contradiction to the last. This Example shews that Women are brought to Reason by degrees.

We were agreeably surprized to find that several Frictions brought on no Soreness in her Mouth, but a considerable Looseness, and great Evacuations by Urine, which cured our Patient,

tient, and stopt without any other means the Gonorrhœa, which she had had from the first Days of her Marriage.

It seemed as if God wanted to save her from the rigorous Treatment she had not deserved, but in Revenge her Husband suffered very much.

II. OBSERVATION.

A Girl, 10 Years of Age, was seized with Tumours in her Neck, which came to Suppuration. After they had discharged abundantly, and that we hoped to see them cicatrise, the Suppuration still continued, the Ulcers were difficult to heal, and still new Tumours appeared, notwithstanding divers Medicines were applied to effect a perfect Cure. I advised her Mother, after she had been a long time in the Surgeon's Hands, to send her to drink the Waters at *Bareges*, which I have seen do great Cures in scrophulous Ulcers. They followed my Advice, and the drinking and pumping of these Waters healed not only the Ulcers, but also melted away entirely the other Swellings which threatned Suppuration.

A Year after, all appeared again, I proposed to the Mother to make her undergo a Salivation. 1st, Because she told me that the Father, who was dead, had before Marriage had several Adventures of Gallantry. 2^{dly}, She owned the Child had been begot in the time of her Menses. And, 3^{dly}, I said, that setting aside these two Reasons, consider-

ing the Swellings in themselves, their difficulty to Cure, and their return after the Waters of *Bareges*, it was plain they were supported by a Leaven in the Mass of Blood, which nothing but mercurial Frictions could destroy, and not to make two Jobs of it, she must absolutely pass through a Salivation.

The Mother acquiesced in my Advice, her Daughter was lodged at a Surgeon's of this Town, and after due Preparations we administered the Frictions, which presently brought on a Looseness, as often happens. We thought that after the Looseness the Mercury would run off by Salivation, but we were surprised to see, that notwithstanding the anodyne Clysters, and a Vomit, the Looseness still continued. After every Friction at Night she purged the next Day, and she never had any Soreness at her Mouth; she had 8 Frictions without reckoning that every Day I made them rub the Glands and Ulcers with mercurial Ointment. I saw the Tumors and Ulcers disappear daily, and the Child was perfectly cured by the Looseness which the Frictions occasioned. So that in 12 Years since that Operation, never any Swelling has appeared again. By way of Precaution, I ordered her to open an Issue 'till her Menfes should appear; and I never have dared to ask her since whether it is closed up or not.

The Course was successful, gentle, and easy; we could never make her keep in Bed or in her Chamber, she was almost all Day long running

running and playing about; she had no sore Mouth, she eat with a good Appetite, and lost hardly any Flesh through those great Evacuations occasioned by the great Number of Frictions.

These two happy Experiments mentioned in these first Observations, made me make some serious Reflexions upon the Advantage which the Patients reaped from those Discharges by Stool, if the Mercury could be determined that way. I said, that I had not only been an Eye Witness to these two Cases, but that even some Authors, especially *Lemeri* in his Chymistry, allows that an Evacuation by Stools after Frictions is good and wholesome. Besides, I remembered that these Practitioners at *Montpelier* raised no more a Salivation, but made the Mercury operate by Extinction, according to the famous Dr. *Deidier's* Doctrine, which I have seen confirmed by a Consultation of Messrs. *Bezac* and *Lasferme*, who in a Pox of 30 Years standing, thought proper to administer Frictions every 3 Days only, to the Quantity of half an Ounce of Ointment, made of one third Part of Mercury, and this Method cured even without any visible Evacuations. I concluded, that the Mercury would cure more securely when it produced an Evacuation by Stool, since according to the Aphorism above quoted. *Non est fidendum bonis quæ præter Evacuationem aliquam sensibilem eveniunt, quippe talia non multum durare consueverunt.* " You ought not to trust to good Symptoms " which

“ which happen without any sensible Evacuation, for such are not like to last long.”

I resolved therefore to make a trial of this way in the manner that I have proposed, by opening the Patient's Belly, and purging when the Mouth should come to be sore. However, when I was even about going to make the Essay, I feared in several Patients successively that this Method would not succeed, and through a Motive of Conscience, I let the Salivation go on and continued in the old Method, determined by the following Reasons.

Hippocrates says in his first Aphorism, *Experimentum periculosum*, “ Experiments are dangerous.” I believed that the Proof before me was successful, when Nature of her own accord vented herself by a Looseness, but that it would perhaps be otherwise if the Physicians wanted to force her: That I exposed the Patient to be hindred from his Cure by interrupting the Salivation ready to come on; and besides, some of our ablest Physicians with whom I spoke about it, seemed to have no good Opinion of this Notion, except one only, and I myself abandoned this System.

The following Observations of 3 Patients treated by a Salivation, where Matters went ill, made me return and think again of carrying off the Mercury by Stool.

III. OBSERVATION.

A Young Woman 15 or 16 Years of Age, very pretty and well made, as I have been informed, took Water in the Port of *Bourdeaux*, and was put on Shore some Leagues from hence; she asked for a private Gentleman's House, to whom she made this Compliment. I am set out to see one of my Aunts 18 Leagues from hence, but I am so afraid upon the Water, that I rather choose to walk than to endure longer any such Fear. I did not dare to go to the Inn for fear of finding bad Company there, who might give me ill Language, wherefore I come to beg you'd give me out of Charity a Lodging; I look upon your House as a secure Retreat, and hope you'll not refuse me this Favour.

The Gentleman charitably bestowed on her the Rites of Hospitality. Curiosity, which is natural to Man, especially in the Country, made him desirous of knowing many Particulars relating to his new Guest; mean while the Sight and Conversation of this amiable Damsel make him amorous.

*Hærent infixi pectore Vultus
Verbaque, nec placidam membris dat cura
quietem.*

Her Beauty Love's Flame kindles in his
Breast,
Nor can his weary'd Members relish Rest.

In

In a Word, he found this Person as gentle and tractable, as she appeared beautiful and lovely. He sends the Servants out of the way and pays himself for his Lodging. A few Days after this young Woman's Departure, he found he had a Gonorrhœa with a Phimosis; he disclosed his Condition to a Surgeon of little Experience, who judged that these Accidents proceeded from overheating only; that there was no likelihood that a young innocent Girl like her of whom we speak, should have any Venereal Distemper, so much the rather as one of the greatest Uneasinesses of the Patient was, that he deflowred a young Girl, who had chosen his House for a Retreat, and who in the Act had suffered a great deal, without doubt, on account of some Ulcers or Inflammations in the Vagina. The Surgeon contented himself with bleeding him, making him drink a great Quantity of Ptisane with Oyl of sweet Almonds, applying a Solution of *Saccharum Saturni* upon his Phimosis, and stopping the Gonorrhœa with Astringents, and boasted of having made a fine Cure.

The Truth is, that the Patient endured this Condition 12 Years without knowing or suspecting it. If he had the Headach, he attributed it to his exposing himself to the Sun; Heats and Tettors in several Parts of his Body to the Heat of his Blood; Watchings and Weariness at Night, to eating too much at Supper, or drinking bad Wine. He had two or three severe Fits of Illness, two of which were Pleu-

Pleurisies, which degenerated into an Empyema, which he had the good Fortune to expectorate. It was a Caries in the Bone of the Roof of the Mouth, which discovered the Affair, and in a Consultation we had, a skilful and experienced Surgeon of this City broke the Ice, and notwithstanding the Patient's exemplary Life, he asked him concerning his past Conduct, and made him own the aforesaid Adventure, and we concluded that he had been poxed from that time, and that the Obstinacy of his Disorders had proceeded from the Venereal Infection.

Now the Business was to treat him by a Salivation, for at that time I knew no other Means of curing the Pox. A famous Surgeon was charged with administering the Remedy, and I assisted with one of my Colleagues. The Patient supported the Operation with a surprising Constancy, and as he is a Man of great Sense, learned and fearing God, I never visited him without being edified by his Reflexions and Morals.

His Cure cost him dear. 1. Almost all his Teeth fell out. 2. A piece of Bone exfoliated from the upper Jaw-bone, where the Sockets of two Teeth are ingrafted. 3. He had some Seams remaining from the Ulcers in his Mouth, which hindered him from opening it, and which we were obliged to cut after the Course. 4. His Face was so disfigured by the Loss of that Bone, and his Teeth, that no one would have been able to know him by his Picture,

Picture, which had been drawn some Years before.

The Reflexions he made during this Course, and which he wrote down, not being able to speak (as is common in a Salivation) might be ranked with those of the R. Father *Bourdalouë* in his Sermon upon Lewdness, and perhaps even make a stronger Impression, altho' founded upon inferior Motives: Man being made so as to be more affected by the Loss of his temporal and present Good, than by the Danger of forfeiting his future and eternal Happiness; he has more at Heart, that which he sees with his Eyes, than what he beholds with the Eyes of his Faith.

He often repeated this Saying of the Scripture, *Gustans gustavi paululum mellis, et ecce morior*. "I have tasted a little Honey, and lo, "I die." An Adventure which he told me, and I believe had been the only one in his Life of that Sort, which he had not looked for, and into which he had the Misfortune to fall, gives him a Distemper for which he must disclose himself to the Barber of his Village; since he has been out of his Hands he has been indisposed 12 Years; he has among the rest two Illnesses, which altho' of themselves curable in a Fortnight, bring him to the last Extremity during 3 Months. He is obliged again to confess to two Physicians and Surgeons, he must go through the grand Remedy, which makes him suffer Martyrdom 40 Days; it cost him a Piece of the Bone of the Roof
 2 of

of his Mouth, almost all his Teeth, his Money, his Reputation, and he is marked in his Face for Life. In Truth, his Confessor might well absolve him from this Sin, without imposing on him any other Penance.

R E M A R K I.

Upon this Observation.

THOSE who treat the Pox by Salivation, should take great Care what they do when the Disorder has made any Havock in the Mouth, such as Ulcers in the Throat, in the Bone of the Roof of the Mouth, in the Uvula, &c. For as in this case the Evacuation is pushed on towards the Parts affected, you cause great Disorders in the Parts which are already weakned. This Observation is a Proof of it, as well as the following, and at least upon these Occasions, the greatest Abettors of a Salivation should pay a Deference to our Experience and Reflexions upon the Method of evacuating the Mercury by Stool.

R E M A R K II.

IF we had carried off the Mercury by Stool we should have saved the Patient his Teeth, the Seams which we were obliged to cut, the considerable Exfoliation of the Bone of the Roof of his Mouth, which might have been managed, the Deformity which he must keep all his Life, without mentioning the Fear, Pain,
and

and Danger : You will see a Proof of this in the third Article of this Chapter.

IV. OBSERVATION.

A Man complaining of a Heat of Urine, and a Running of a green Colour, applies to an Apothecary's Journeyman, who asks him several Questions concerning Affairs of Gallantry. The Patient assures him with Imprecation, that he never had known Woman : The good Apothecary incapable of cheating and lying, thought the Person would not impose upon him. He looked in *Etmuller*, where he thought to have read such a Case, this Author mentioning a sort of Gonorrhœa, depending from a Relaxation of the Prostata, and was charmed to find the Passage to agree with the Case of this Saint of a Patient, who wanted nothing more than a Means to stifle the various Reflexions that might be made upon his Indisposition if it came to be known : The Apothecary, to shew me that he read, brought the Patient to his Shop, and desired I would examine him : he opens at the same time *Etmuller's* Translation into French, and reads the whole Passage to me, which he thinks hits this Case. The Passage is in my Edition, pag. 534. in these Words. *Gonorrhœa benigna est quando citra causam manifestam v. g. citra actum Venereum suspectum effluit continuo liquamen, scilicet materia tenuis aquosa, et copiosa citra pruritum Venereum et membri tiginem.* " A benign Gonorrhœa is, when
2 " without

“ without any manifest Cause, that is, without
 “ a suspicious Venereal act, a Liquid ouzes
 “ out continually, viz. a thin watery Matter,
 “ in Quantity, without any Venereal itching,
 “ or itching of the Member.” And speaking
 of the Cure of this Sort of Gonorrhœa in the
 following Page, he says. *Externis Adstringen-*
tibus et internis prostatæ glandulæ firmandæ sunt
et in tonum naturalem, restituendæ. “ The Glandulæ
 “ Prostatæ must be strengthened and re-
 “ stored to their natural Tone by external and
 “ internal Restringtons.” Having seen that
 the Patient voided green Matter, the Mouth of
 his Yard being very angry, and that he com-
 plained of a great Heat, especially after mak-
 ing Water, I waited ’till he was gone out, to
 open my Advice to the Apothecary. I re-
 presented to him that *Etmuller’s* Case was not
 like the Patient’s; that the Quality of the Run-
 ning was very different, since *Etmuller* talks of
 watery Running without any Heat, but that
 this of the Patient was green, accompanied with
 violent Pain; in a word, that the Patient im-
 posed upon us, and that never any Gonorrhœa
 shewed itself plainer.

The Apothecary’s Journeyman went to meet
 the Patient, to inform him of what I had said.
 New Protestations of his Innocence, and their
 Conversation ended in serious Reflexions upon
 the World, who put such ill Constructions
 upon the Symptoms which *Etmuller* explains
 so favourably in behalf of hypocritical Liber-
 tines.

Three Months afterwards I was consulted for the same Person, who had in his Throat an Ulcer the bigness of the Nail of ones Thumb. I knew him to be the same Person whom I had seen: The Apothecary had followed all the while *Etmuller's* Prescriptions, and by astringent Powders taken inwardly, and Injections of the same Sort, he had stopt the Gonorrhœa, and had given the Patient the Pox. I said, it signified nothing to deny the Fact, that the nocturnal Pains which the Patient complained of, joined with the Ulcer, and what had past before, were certain and indisputable Signs of the Pox, and that proper Measures must be taken to put him in a regular Course.

The Secret could not be kept any longer with respect to those on whom the Patient had his Dependence. I was commissioned to break it to them, which was not to be avoided, because they were to furnish the Money necessary for this Course, which it was not proper to do at the Patient's Lodging, to avoid Suspicion, either that he might perhaps be seen in the Salivation, or that People would be forbid coming into his Room.

I found so much Charity and Goodness in those on whom he depended, that I was charm'd with it; and notwithstanding the Badness of the Times, all the Liberality necessary to free him from his unhappy Condition; proper Measures were taken, the Remedies administered to raise a Salivation, (for I had not yet
dared

dared to put my System in execution) the Salivation became copious and abundant, it gave such a Stench, that I could perceive it in the Street when I went into the House to see him. In the height of his Pain he related to us his Story, and told us more of it than we wanted to know.

I must here witness against myself; altho' I had taken the best Measures, and had given great Attention to this Patient, Matters turned ill. I had a great desire to second the Goodness of his Superiors, and do Honour to their Expences; the Respect I had for them augmented my Care; but altho' I had made use of but four Frictions very gradually, to make the Salivation rise by degrees, it nevertheless increased surprisingly, tho' I changed his Linen soon, and purged him; it lasted two whole Months, and seemed to spring up again at the time when it should have ceased, and we were obliged to use frequent Purgatives, Gargarisms, &c. to stop it. To increase our Misfortunes, we found he could hardly open his Mouth; we were obliged again to go to Work to Repair this Disorder, and to cut the Seams which the Escars of the Ulcers had formed, to force the Musculi Elevatores of the Jaw, by putting between his Teeth every Day a piece of Wood, which was changed from less to greater by degrees, to conquer the Resistance of the *Crotaaphites*, *Masseter Pterygoideus*, &c. which seemed to be fastned; and after all the Patient

retained a very nauseous Stench which we could never remove.

V. OBSERVATION.

A Workman, who distinguished himself by a superior Talent in his Profession, had through an Excess of Libertinism the Pox 20 Years, whilst he had been separated from his Wife. The Distemper had at first attacked the Parts of Generation as commonly happens; he had had obstinate Gonorrhœas, and ill cured Warts, a Bubo, &c. Afterwards Inflammations of his Eyes, and a Cataract was formed in his right Eye, which entirely destroyed the Sight of it: besides, his right Arm became numb'd and paralytical. This Accident rendered him incapable, of working at his Business; he had been a good while convinced that he had the Pox, but the fear of the Operation had made him put it off from time to time, 'till the Incapacity of using his Arm determined him at last. I took a particular Care of this Patient: I was willing to see whether the Salivation would restore his Sight, as well as remove the Symptoms which disordered his Parts of Generation, as *Alexander Trajan Petronius* reports, which *Schenkius* has copied verbatim in Observation 309. L. 1. *Quidam qui antequam morbo Gallico afficeretur, altero oculo cæcus erat, suffusione densissima (vulgus cataractam vocat) oculum occupante, et a morbo Galico, et a suffusione, quod maxime mirum est, evasit; neque a ratione alienum est, inunctione illas cataractas posse*

*posse dissolvi, cum frequens experientia doceat per-
duros tumores ex pituita crassa et concreta geni-
tos illitu hydrargirii potenter dissolvi.* " A Per-
" son, before he had the *French Disease*, was
" blind with one Eye, a thick Suffusion (vul-
" garly call'd a Cataract) infesting it, and he
" was cured both of the Pox and the Cataract.
" And it is not against Reason for Cataracts to
" be dissolved by Unction, when frequent Ex-
" perience teaches us that hard Tumours from
" a thick and coagulated Flegm are removed
" by mercurial Friction."

I had still a greater Reason to hope for a Cure of the Cataract in my Patient, since I must look upon it as a Symptom of the Pox, and that it had come after it, whereas in the Observation here quoted, the Cataract had preceded.

I knew the Patient was of an uneasy, brisk, and impatient Temper; I administred the Frictions with a great deal of Care, nevertheless, the Salivation came on abundantly, the Patient suffered with Impatience, but what comforted him was that he began to see with that Eye, and recovered the Motion of his right Arm, with which he held the Tool at his Work.

After the Salivation, all the Symptoms being removed, he opened his Mouth with some Difficulty, which he has always reproached me with, the other Advantages he had received from the Salivation not being, to his way of thinking, sufficient amends for the lessening of the opening of his Mouth.

These 3 Cases which happened at different times, joined with the unfortunate Events which I know have happened to able Surgeons who have lost Patients, some in their Houses, others more expert have sent them from thence, in the agonies of Death, to prevent the Shame of the funeral Ceremonies at their Doors, and with other Accidents of this Sort, set me at last quite against the Salivation; and I took a firm Resolution never to treat any one more by that Method, but to return to my System, which I did soon after.

Chance soon furnished me with a favourable Opportunity to try what I had to expect from it, as will appear from the following Observation.

VI. OBSERVATION.

A Rich Gentleman, an only Son, had the Misfortune to get the Pox; a virulent Gonorrhœa, which the common Remedies could not conquer, accompanied with Warts, Chancres, &c. characterized the Distemper. The Business was to cure him in his Father's House, and unknown to him; no Pretext being able to screen his Absence, had it been necessary to treat him at a Surgeon's House. The Father was a severe Man, an Affair of this Nature might have revived his antient Tenderness for a Son he had by his first Marriage. It was therefore necessary to let the Mother into the Secret, who had already some Knowledge of it from seeing her Son's Shirts: she
came

came to me bitterly lamenting about her beloved Son's Misfortune, and the insurmountable Difficulties, as she thought, to get him cured, without the Father's knowing it. I assured her we would take such Measures that he should not so much as suspect it; and added, that this Accident, great as it was, might turn to her Son's Advantage, since it would be a powerful Lesson to reclaim him from his hankering after Lewdness; and that the same Medicine made use of to cure his Pox, was also good to remove the frequent Defluxions he had laboured under from his Infancy. In short, I employed all Sorts of Reflexions I was capable of to stop her torrent of Tears. *Cæteraque hujusmodi quibus ulceratæ mentes ad sanitatem revocantur. Petronius.* "And other Things of " this Sort whereby wounded Minds may be " restored to Health.

I resolved then to try in form what my System would produce.

I was confirmed in my Notion, 1st, Because there was a Gonorrhœa, which I was sure of curing by carrying the Mercury off by copious and abundant Stools. 2^{dly}, I was also persuaded I should cure his Disorder of the Eyes, in which purging is of infinite Service, according to *Hippocrates's Aph. Lippientem alvi profusio corripit bonum.* " A Looseness coming up- " on a Person that has sore Eyes is beneficial." And as I shall shew in my Observation on the Distemper of the Eyes. 3^{dly}, It was impossi-

ble for me to do otherwise for the Reasons before intimated.

A Surgeon of this Town, a Friend of mine, saw him with me. We gave him the Frictions after due Preparation, and carried off the Mercury by strong Purgatives: this, the Frictions and Purging, we continued a considerable time, and succeeded perfectly well. The Gonorrhœa stop'd, as likewise the Inflammation in his Eyes. The Warts which were much lessened were cut, the Root of them touched with the *lapis infernalis*, and the Patient has been very well since.

This happy Event gave me infinite Pleasure, and I have since treated no Pox but by this Method, and always with good Success. I shall relate some Observations which I have chosen, for some remarkable Circumstance, the others I pass by in Silence not to swell this Volume by tiresome Repetitions.

VII. OBSERVATION.

A Young Man, a Stranger, got the Pox in a Debauch he made in a bad and numerous Company. He had a Paraphimosis which had swell'd the Glans twice as big as in the state of Erection. He had so violent a Gonorrhœa, that he soiled a whole Napkin in 24 Hours, and Blood came away mixt with the Gonorrhœa; Besides, he had Swellings in his Groin, which I feared would come to Suppuration. I ordered him to be blooded plentifully to prevent the Inflammation of the Glans degenerating

ing into Suppuration, or Gangrene; as also to stop the Bleeding from his Penis. I prepared him by the Bath and Whey, and put him quickly into the Frictions work'd off by strong Purges. He had Frictions without number, the Evacuations by Stool answered our Wishes, and when they slackened I had recourse to Clysters and Purgatives of Jalap.

The Paraphimosis went off soon without cutting the Prepuce; the Gonorrhœa decreased in Proportion, the Swellings of the Groin melted away without Suppuration; in short, the Gonorrhœa perfectly stop'd, and the Patient was well cured.

Over and above he voided a Tape-Worm by piece-meal, and we continued the Frictions and Evacuations even after he was well of the Pox, 'till we got the Head of the Worm.

That same Year I had another Patient of whom hereafter, who in the like Course voided a Tape-Worm of a prodigious Length which came forth in 9 Pieces at different times.

1st, It is to be observed that the first Pieces were narrow, and by degrees it became broader towards the Middle, and afterwards it grew less towards the Head, in the same Proportion as it had increased from the Tail to the Middle, which agrees with the Figure of the Tape-Worms represented in the Copper Plate of Dr. Andry's Book.

2^{dly}, The Pieces of this Worm, which were drawn out with the greatest Precaution not to

tear it, had Motion 2 or 3 Hours after they were separated from the rest of the Body, different from that of drawing together and stretching out, which is the ordinary Motion of Worms; this made me judge the rest of the Worm to be sick and faint.

As I had brought away these two Tape-Worms, in one Year, by my Method, I conceived hopes of having found out an infallible Remedy to destroy it. This Worm baffles almost all vermifuge Medicines, and resists the most violent Shock of the best Compositions. I know very well that the Remedy which Dr. *Andry* proposes to destroy it, has not succeeded with some of my Friends, who made use of it: But when a Deluge of Mercury pours into the Canal of the Intestines, which continually penetrates into the Body of this Worm during a Month or longer; and that, besides, it is pushed on by copious Stools without intermission, grown sick and faint by the intromission of so much Mercury, and disturbed by the continual and strong Contractions of the Intestines, it must absolutely come away, as I have seen in these two Patients: I hope to make further Trials how this Method will answer in expelling the Solitary or Tape-Worm.

VIII. OBSERVATION.

A Young Man, 22 Years of Age, had a very visible Pox, a Gonorrhœa which could not be stopp'd, the Groin full of Buboës, some of which had suppurated, and others were as hard

as a Stone, the Heads of the triceps Muscles hard and almost callous; Pustules on the Forehead with a Crust, and the Head covered like a Leper. He was put under the Course of these Remedies; we had no occasion to make use of Purgatives to determine the Effects of Mercury to the Alvus, for it run off quickly by a Looseness after every Friction. We injected not one Clyster, Friction upon Friction acted like Purgatives. We saw the Scabs of his Head and Face fall off, the hardness in the Groin and of the triceps Muscles disappear; The Gonorrhœa stop, and the Patient grew well, without ever losing his Appetite or Rest; and as it were without being sensible that he was under a Course.

IX. OBSERVATION.

A Man of an honourable Profession, being formerly at *Paris*, had an Intrigue at the House where he lodged; he went so far, that at last he grew ill at the time when he was to return into the Country. It was only a Chancre which a Surgeon at *Bordeaux* seemingly cured in the best manner, since the Ulcer disappeared, and he retired well satisfied to his Village. Twenty five Years after he broke out all over his Body with terrible itching. He was ill a long time, and had recourse to Bleeding, Purgings, Whey, absorbent Powders to sweeten the Blood, and other Remedies which the Physicians of the Place had advised him to. He was hardly recovered when he relapsed

ed in the same manner, without giving any occasion to it, either by a bad Regimen, or by excess of Venery, or immoderate Exercise. I was consulted upon his Disorder; he had made mention in his Case of the Ulcer in his Yard which had been cured at *Bordeaux*: But the length of Time since that Adventure, the good Health of his Wife, by whom he had several Children, and the Skill of the Surgeon, who had treated him, made me think favourably in behalf of the Patient of all these Accidents, and I judged that another Infection not of the Venereal Kind might occasion them. I ordered Bleeding, the Bath and Whey, and afterwards a Preparation of Mercury of the Charter-House at *Bordeaux*, which the late Brother *Anthony* told me was a Preparation of Mercury and Mars, with a little Scammony to carry it off, to be continued a long time. These Remedies made him so easy that he thought himself cured. He continued in Health a whole Year, at the End of which the same Complaints returned. Then I thought the Patient had the Pox, and that we should only palliate the Disorder, by going through the same Course as last Year, but that to cure him radically, it was absolutely necessary to make him undergo the Frictions according to our Method, by which he was perfectly cured. Since that time I have heard nothing from him but Thanks and Assurances of his good Health, which he has enjoyed since that Course.

We

We must own there is something very surprising and miraculous in this Disease. *Divinum quid in morbis inest. Hip.* "There is something Divine in Diseases." A Man finds himself well 25 Years, his Wife in good Health, yet after so long a time he must be treated for the Pox, because 25 Years before he got a Chancre at *Paris*, of which he was cleared. We have endeavoured to account for this Phenomenon in the System of the Worms.

One may form the same Judgment about the Ulcers which affect the Parts, with that which we have established about Gonorrhœas, that is to say, they are sometimes a Disease, and sometimes a Symptom. The Character of these distinguishes itself by its obstinacy and its returning, for then the Pox is of the Party, whereas when the Venom is fix'd in one Part, without being communicated to the Blood, the Evil is easier to cure, and doth not return.

X. OBSERVATION.

A Young Woman was married at the Age of 12 Years, she was handsome, and had a great share of Wit, but fell soon into the ways of Gallantry (this happens sometimes to Persons that are married so young, that fall to Work too early, as is often seen by Experience) the Reason which *Aristotle* gives for it seems to me deserving some Notice. This Philosopher says, we should keep Children from Luxury, as from the Plague, 'till their Parts have acquired

acquired their natural Consistence, and that this is the way to make them have more Continence all the rest of their Days, *Ut continentiores per reliquam omnem vitam degant, cavendum est ne nondum firmato judicio libidini præmature laxent habenas.* So much the rather as their Parts give way, and are distended beyond Measure, and the animal Spirits make themselves large and easy Passages, which they pervade easily upon the least Signal, which the Will makes, and from which it is not easy to disuse them the remaining Part of Life.

She was soon distempered, *Manet hæc in peregrina libidine fors ineluctabilis,* "This is the "unavoidable Consequence of Foreign Lust." Her Symptoms were a green Running, heat of Urine, nocturnal Pains, an Excrescence at her Fundament half an Inch long, and the thickness of three Crowns; besides many Complainants whom she had infected.

As she was full of Juices, and appeared hail and plump, there was no Occasion to bathe her; she was Blooded and Purged, and presently put into the Course of our Method. Matters went on as well as could be, but her Menses appeared the twentieth Day, altho' I had taken the Precaution to begin immediately after they were past: She had not informed me that she was out of order every 3 Weeks. We were obliged to leave off the Frictions and Purging during the time of her Menses, which lasted 8 Days compleat. During this Interval; the Mercury made a few Ulcers in her Mouth, which

which caused some Spitting, which we could not stop by the Means of Purgatives, 'till after the Menfes. If I had known ſhe had her Menfes every 3 Weeks, I would have left off the Frictions the 15th Day, and purged her the 16th and 17th to prevent the Salivation; but when the Menfes appeared there was no purging her, for fear of ſtopping them. The Salivation laſted ſome Days, her Mouth was very ſore, which however did not hinder her from talking or eating, altho' with ſome difficulty. The Excreſcence diſappeared, all the Symptoms went off, except the Running, which grew conſiderably leſs, and of a different Colour: We were obliged to purge her afterwards to cure the Running.

This Obſervation makes it appear that the Salivation doth not cure the Gonorrhœa, as *Sydenham* has obſerved, and I after him. And, I am well perſuaded, that if the Menfes had not interpoſed to diſturb our Courſe, in pushing the Evacuation of Mercury through the Alvus, we ſhould have cured the whole more expeditiouſly.

The Reader will pardon me if I tell him a Story concerning this Patient, tho' it doth not at all belong to the Subject I treat upon.

The Day ſhe was to go to the Surgeon's who aſſiſted her with me, I bid her come at 7 o' Clock in the Evening, and ordered my Servant to conduct her up Stairs to my Apartment, in caſe I ſhould not be come Home, and deſire her to wait for me; which was done.

done. Two handsome and brisk young Gentlemen of my Acquaintance, who lodged in the same House, one aged 21, and the other 25, seeing a pretty young Woman go into my Apartment the Beginning of the Night, did not doubt but I had a mind to divert myself. They went up one after the other under pretext of making me a Visit, tho' they were sure I was not there, and found a pleasant Person, not at all coy, who did not look as if she ailed any thing. They reasoned thus; this is a Woman of Pleasure, since she bears with this free Conversation; we shall run no risque with her, for our old Doctor understands those Matters, and would not expose himself to get a Distemper at his Age, wherefore we may safely venture before he partakes of his good Fortune. One assured her she waited in vain for me, and offered to conduct her to his Chamber, beg'd a share in her good Graces, and promised her a Tenderness which should last as long as his Life. This could not offer any thing else, for tho' he had rich Parents, his Father kept him short in Money. for fear he should make ill Use of it. The other more experienced offered her his Purse, and would have persuaded her to take some of his Money. *Hæc omnia tibi dabo, &c.* "All this will I give thee." She answered them both, that they ought to be thankful to her for her Virtue, and that upon serious Reflexion they would be glad that she had not consented to their Solicitations. At last they went away, and she
telling

telling me the Affair, I took the liberty of representing to them the Danger they had run, that they would have had this in common with all those whom I have cured of the Pox, that they had got it at the time when they thought themselves most secure; since no one is such a Fool as to hazard his Health and Life if he foresaw the Danger, and that the first thing was to believe there was nothing to fear, &c.

XI. OBSERVATION.

A Woman of Pleasure, who came to this Town to follow her Business, got a terrible Pox, the Symptoms of which were Ulcers almost over the whole Body, in her Legs, Thighs, and chiefly on her Parts, and about her Fundament; the Groin full of hard and painful Swellings, which threatned to break, Warts about the Anus and Pudendum, a Tumour in her Breast the Bigness of an Egg, Swellings in the Neck, some of which were ulcerated, Pustles in the Head with a Crust, and withal a Suppression of her Menses almost a whole Year.

This Situation hindred her from getting her Livelihood by a Business wherein she had raised her Fortune as usual, consisting only in fine Cloaths, Rings, Snuff-boxes, Furniture, and some little Plate. When her Gallants found she had the Distemper, she fell into Disrepute, she got nothing by her Business, and was oblig-

H

ed

ed to live upon what she had laid up many Years.

Now she takes up another Business, and one may almost apply to her the literal Sense of the Passage in *Petronius*. *Matrona perquam honesta, quæ multas olim hæreditates officio pulchritudinis extorserat, tamen anus et floris extincti, filias ingerebat urbis senibus, et per hanc successionem artem suam perseverabat extendere, &c.*

“ A Gentlewoman, who had extorted formerly many Estates by Means of her Beauty,
 “ but when she was grown old, and had lost
 “ her Bloom, introduced young Women to
 “ the Elders of the City, and by this Succession continued to carry on her Profession,
 “ &c.”

This second Employment not yielding her enough to satisfy her Extravagance, she was obliged to join with it a little Theft and Pilfering, in which she was caught, and condemned by the Mayor and Jurates to be whipt by the Hands of the Hangman; she appeals to the Parliament: Whilst her Cause went on, two Ladies of *la Charité* took Compassion on this Wretch, and represented to the Commissioners of the Prisons and the criminal Judges that the Sentence of the Mayor could not be executed without Danger of her Life; and that besides, it would be a scandalous sight to see a miserable Creature, half-naked, and covered with Ulcers; whipt about the Streets. That they would take care to have her cured, and that the Operation would be a sufficient Punishment;

nishment: They had such good Success as to obtain from the Judges her Discharge.

These two charitable Ladies presented her to a Surgeon, who frightened them with his extravagant Demand which he made to undertake the Business. One of them a Widow, a Woman of great Sense and Virtue, and of uncommon Charity, pray'd me to see her, and to think of some Expedient to deliver her from this unhappy Situation. I told her after I had examined her, that she might be perfectly cured for less than two Pistoles, provided she would supply her with common Food, and of easy Digestion for about a Month. She found the same Difficulty to get her a Lodging, that is to say, they asked her a great Price, upon which she resolved to make her a Bed in her own House, and to keep her as one of her own Family.

The Business was to cure her as soon as possible. The Frictions were administered without any Preparation, and the Purges between whiles. It is inconceivable how soon the Ulcers healed, the Excrescences went away, the Tumours in the Breast and Neck disappeared, and the Patient recovered to a Miracle.

The Salivation came on a little the 20th Day, which I attributed to her throwing away a Purge, not thinking that it would cost her so much Pain. By the by I observed that when the Ointment is rubbed in at the Ulcers, it enters and penetrates more easily, as will be seen in Observation 16. Wherefore in such

Cafe I take care to purge brisker, having found by Experience, that the Salvation is soon at hand without this Precaution.

Her *Menses* appeared a Month after her Cure. There is Reason to believe that the slender Diet which she had, living upon Prison Allowance and Alms, joined with the Trouble of her Imprisonment, had occasioned the Suppression of her *Menses*, as happened to *Phaetusa*, who as *Hippocrates* reports in his *Epideemics*, fell into the like Disorders by the Grief she had from her Husband's Banishment. It is also probable that the copious Discharge from the numerous Ulcers carried off the Matter of the *Menses*, without occasioning the Accidents commonly attending Obstructions; but when they were healed the *Menses* appeared again.

I said to this charitable Widow, that the Good she did to this unhappy Creature, would be a great Means to procure her Salvation, since *Jesus Christ* himself says that he is in the Person of the Poor. *Quod uni ex meis fecistis mihi fecistis*. "What you have done to one
" of mine you have done to me." And that with the Presence of Mind she was endowed with, she would not fail telling him at the Day of Judgment; "I have visited you in Prison,
" dieted and cloathed you. I have by my Application taken you out of the Hands of the
" Judges, I have saved you from a publick
" and infamous Punishment. No one cared
" to be troubled with you and your Ulcers, I
" made you a Bed in my House, where I
" lodged

“ lodged you, and maintained you, procured
“ you Medicines, and prayed the Physician to
“ cure you, waited upon you myself, &c. In
“ short, that *Jesus Christ* could never forget
“ this Action.

XII. OBSERVATION.

A Man, 50 Years of Age, of a very good Constitution, and well-proportioned, had the Pox 17 Years. His Distemper shewed itself by Tettors in the Face with Crusts, and a Carnosity in the Canal of the Yard, which obliged him to probe himself often, which he did very dextrously; he made Use of leaden Probes rubb'd with Mercury. He had a little habitual Running of 17 Years standing, which could never be cured, tho' attempted by able Men, both at *Paris* and *Bourdeaux*; besides, he had met with several unlucky Adventures in his Youth, which had never been well cured. But at last, at the Carnaval of 17 he got a new Gonorrhœa upon the old one, which gave him great Heat of Urine, and violent Pains in his Yard at the time of Erection. I had formerly often advised him to pass thro' the grand Remedy, but he would never consent to it, under pretence that he was otherwise pretty well. He attributed his Tettors and Crusts to a Heat in the Blood, his Running to a Relaxation of the Vessels, &c. But his last Adventure determined him to go thro' my Method. I was glad to see, by treating him for the Pox, that a continued Flux of

the Belly, encouraged by Frictions and Purges, would contribute to the curing of the Carnosity, which is an Evil more to be feared than Death itself. *Magis ipsa morte timendum malum.* I was also pleased with the Opportunity of trying without any other Essay, the Truth of the practical Maxim proposed by *Bagl. Avefica ad alvum tutissima via est.* "From the Bladder to the Alvus the Way is very safe."

I began with the common Preparations, Bleeding, Purging, Whey, purging Clysters. I put him in the Course of Frictions, which I work'd off carefully, and repeated at Intervals. The Remedies made the Tettors and Crufts of the Face dry up entirely, the Running lessened, the Heat of Urine ceased, and he began to make Water freely, being obliged to probe himself but seldom. After immense Evacuations made by Stool, we saw the Running stop: Nevertheless, whenever the Patient made any Excess in Eating or Drinking, it appeared again a little. He afterwards took a sudorific Ptisan, by the Help of which the Running stopp'd, the weakned Prostatae having regained their Spring, altho' after a long time.

I always had a great regard for the Opinion of those who believe that the Mercury operates even three Month after it has been left off, and that it circulates a long while with the Blood after it has been introduced by Frictions. This Observation you find in *Riverius*, under the Article of *Chap. 16.* of the Observations communicated by Mr. *Pomerat*, a very
expe-

experienced Surgeon of *Montpelier*. "It happens often, says he, that the Surgeons err in treating of the Pox, when after the Administration of the proper Remedies, they don't think the Patients well cured, because there yet appears some Symptom of the Pox, so that they plunge them into a new Course and fling them into a Consumption. But the Symptoms which remain after the Course, do commonly disappear, either of themselves, or by the Assistance of some simple Remedy, as may be seen from the four following Histories, &c." which may be read in *Riverius's* Observations.

XIII. OBSERVATION.

NOTHING is more troublesome to the Patient and Physician than Carnosities in the Urethra, or as some pretend, the *Callosities*. It is a greater Evil than the Stone in the Bladder, since this may be cured by Lithotomy; whereas the other Complaint is hardly to be cured, or even alleviated. The Difficulty of introducing the Probe, the Pain, the Expence, and the Danger bring the Patient to Despair.

Being animated by the Diminution of the Disorder in the Patient of the preceding Observation, I had a Mind to try what a long Continuation of Frictions and Purges would avail in it, the Reproach of Physicians and Surgeons, and the Torment of the Patients labouring under it. I built upon the following

Reasons. 1.) I observed a considerable Diminution of this Complaint in the foregoing Patient; for altho' he is obliged to probe himself from time to time; yet the Intervals are more considerable, and in the intermediate time he voids his Urine with more ease, which is not at all comparable to the unhappy Situation he was in before the Course. Now if a certain Number of Frictions, of which the Patient grew tired very soon, were capable of producing so good an Effect, one may reasonably flatter ones self that by doubling or trebling, if necessary, the Number of Frictions, one may arrive at a total Destruction of the Caruncles, since they have been considerably diminished by a less Number. 2.) By the practical Aphorism of *Bagl.* quoted above, the Evacuation by Stool is always useful and profitable in Complaints of the Bladder. *A vesica ad album tutissima via est.* 3.) Since the Warts and Tumours in the Groin, and the Exostoses melt away by this Means, why should we not also hope to disperse the Excrescencies and Obstacles in the urinary Passage? 4.) There was no other Remedy; the Canal was so bung'd up, that two good Surgeons one after another could not succeed in probing the Patient, altho' prepared by bleeding, emollient Baths, &c. but on the contrary nothing but Blood appeared, without being able to introduce the Probe beyond the Stoppage. The Observation is as follows:

A Man aged 56 Years, who from a plain Footman was arrived to a good Fortune for the Country, had in his Youth met with several unlucky Adventures, *viz.* frequent Gonorrhœas, Chancres, and a Phimosis: He had never been well cured, he quack'd himself up with a Ptisan in which he put Senna, Crystal Mineral, and to the Ulcers he applied Unguentum Basilicum mix'd with red Precipitate; besides this he had also a Syringe for Injection. All these Disorders together brought on at last Carnosities in his Yard, so that he made Water only drop by drop, with great Pain; and the most unhappy Circumstance was that he could not reap any Benefit from the Probe, which two skilful Persons attempted to introduce at two different times. There also rise a hard Tumour in the Perinæum, of the Bigness of a Pigeon's Egg, which made us presume the Obstacle within was very considerable.

After I had prepared him, I put him into the Course of the Frictions and Purging; it is not to be imagined how good an Effect it produced; animated by this Success I had him rubbed so often, that I forget the Number; it lasted almost three Months. The Tumour was anointed every Day, and after the first Frictions, which we made close upon one another, the last were admitted at Intervals. The Tumour of the Perinæum went away almost entirely, and the Patient made Urine easier, altho' it came not in a full Stream. However
he

he voided it archwise, and thought it no Hardship to be a little longer about it, as it came away without Pain.

I cannot forbear relating an Instance of his free and honest Disposition. I asked him towards the end of his Cure, how he had done to acquire so much Wealth, having Houses in Town, Estate in the Country, a Place, Capital, Contracts, &c. He answered me, “ I always
 “ was frugal, I never went to Taverns, I lent
 “ the Money I got by Wages to young Gen-
 “ tlemen of Fortune upon their laced Cloaths,
 “ or Plate, Watches, Snuff-boxes, &c. and had
 “ at least 2 Sols per Crown Interest per Month,
 “ and when I found they wanted Money
 “ very much, I had to 3 or 4. I was as cun-
 “ ning as a Fox, and afterwards put out my all
 “ at a great Profit in the same Traffick. Thus
 “ God has blessed my Endeavours, and my
 “ Fortune has grown every Day.” I asked him whether he had never met with any Casuist, who had censured this Business, and how his Confessors took up with this cunning Dealing? He said he had never accused himself; that it was a Business many others followed, and that he looked upon the Profits as very lawful. There is room to believe it would have been a hard Task to persuade him to make Restitution; accordingly I did not undertake it, since that did not belong to my Province.

The same Patient having taken to working hard, and Drinking, relapsed a Year after into

a Difficulty of making Water, for which Reason he was put under the same Course: But I judged proper to make him use Leaden Probes rubbed with Mercury to keep the Canal always dilated, and to prevent the swelling and spreading of these Carnosities.

XIV. OBSERVATION.

A Woman aged 35 Years caught the Pox of her Husband, which shewed itself by a green Running, Ulcers, and frequent Inflammations in the Parts, and the Hoarseness of her Voice. In this Condition she conceived 3 times, and miscarried every time about the 4th or 5th Month, of dead and rotten Fœtus's. Being with Child the fourth time, she consulted me to avoid miscarrying. After I had examined her, I thought by the Symptoms now mentioned she had the Pox, and that to this the Death of the Children, and Miscariages were owing. I also examined her Husband, who owned to me, that he had got some Chancres in the Country from a strolling Wench, and that he had cured himself by Lime Water. He had also an Exostosis in his Leg on the Os Tibiæ, which is a Symptom of the Pox well pointed out.

To prevent her miscarrying a fourth time, I thought it necessary to put her under my Method; and tho' *Hippocrates* was against me, *Aph. 27. Sect. 7.* which prognosticates Abortion in a Tenesmus: *Mulieri utero gerenti si tenesmus supervenerit facit abortum*, because say
the

the Interpreters, the Rectum lying under the Womb, may communicate its Irritations there, and that the perpetual Contractions of the Muscles of the lower Belly inseparable from a Tenesmus, press upon the Matrix, and push forth the Fœtus.

Nevertheless as the same *Hippocrates* allows us to purge pregnant Women from the 4th to the 7th Month, according to the *Aphor. Gravidæ sunt medicandæ à quarto usque ad septimum mensem, sed hæc minus, juniora autem et seniora vereri oportet.* (Pregnant Women are to be purged from the fourth to the seventh Month; but these less, for you should be cautious when the Fœtus is very young, or very old.) I thought I might undertake curing her, and that this last Aphorism ought to prevail over any Inference and Argument drawn from the first.

Besides the great Danger of a fourth Miscarriage in this Pregnancy as in the former, was a Reason to undertake her. *Periculum temeritatem excusat in quo præcipiti multa recta fiunt, quæ alias omittenda forent, satius enim est remedium anceps experiri, quam ægotantem certo exitio relinquere.* When there is Danger from all Sides, the Mind determines for that Side where the least appears. In short I have seen breeding Women ill of a Dysentery, which is a Distemper more productive of Miscarriages than a Tenesmus, who yet did not miscarry, altho' they were blooded in the Foot,
vomited

vomited with Ipecacuanna, and took other Remedies to effect a Cure.

In this Case the Fœtus run yet a greater Risque if the Mother was left alone, and not treated after this Method, since in all Probability it would have come away before the time dead like the others; whereas by this Means the Mother would not only be secured against any Progress of the Distemper, but even the Fœtus would be cured at the same time, as I have read in the Observations of a Surgeon at *Lions* upon the Pox, who put pregnant Women into a Salivation, and cured the Mother and the Child at the same time.

The preliminary Preparations being made, we repeated the Frictions and Purges frequently, and a great Looseness ensued, which perfectly cured the Patient. She was delivered at her time of a sound Child, she suckled it herself, and it is a lovely Infant both on account of its Beauty, Wit, and Behaviour; and I never pass through that Street without looking upon it with Pleasure.

Her Husband went through the same Course, and with the like Success, barring that the Exostosis appears still a little, but it is diminished considerably.

I have often reflected that we are wrong not to venture upon Remedies during the Pregnancy of Women, when they are indicated, for fear of making them miscarry. Experience has convinced me, that the Remedies which the Distemper requires do not procure
Abortion ;

Abortion; and if copious and reiterated Bleeding in the Foot, and Emeticks would do it, we should not see so many illegitimate Pregnancies at the *Palais*, (a Court of Justice) since there are few young Women and Widows, when with Child, who to support the Appearance of a false Virtue, or in hopes of cheating somebody into Matrimony, would not attempt to destroy a Fruit which Love has produced by a Crime, and endeavour to get rid of it by a greater. *Etmuller* says, it is difficult to provoke Abortion. *Abortum arte provocare ut ut difficillimum, ita et Medico Christiano prorsus indignum*, (as it is difficult to provoke Miscarriage, so it is unworthy of a Christian Physician.) And it has pleased God, that those who have Knowledge enough to conduct such a criminal Work, are not willing to do it, nor to expose themselves to the Censure of *Cicero* in a parallel Case against a Physician of his Time. *A cujus audacia ne vel materni Corporis Custodia fœtum tegere valuit: Hæredem familiæ, memoriam nominis, subsidium Generis humani designatum, denique Reipublicæ civem, sustulit*, (from whose Boldness even the Custody of the Mother's Belly could not protect the Fœtus: He has swept away the Heir of a Family, the Remembrance of the Name, him who was designed for a Support to the Race of Mankind, and lastly a Citizen of the Republick.)

XV. OBSERVATION.

A Very beautiful young Woman, who had passed the first Years of her Life in Service with a Person of Quality, one might apply to her the Encomium which *Lafon* bestows on a *Dutch* Woman in his Treatise of the Plague. *Puella quædam servitiis vitam tolerans, quam nascendi sors nec genere illustrem aut opibus abundantem effecerat, forma tamen Corporis et pulchritudine statuis omnibus emendatiore donaverat, &c.* (a Girl living by Servitude, whom Birth had neither chanced to make Noble or Rich, but had given her a beautiful Form exceeding that of all Statues.) She was married and gave her Husband, among the rest of her Portion, the Pox, (beautiful Women reduced to the Necessity of going to Service are more exposed than ordinary ones, since they are pursued more closely, or that they are of a more tender Disposition.) However she brought her Husband a Daughter full of Pustles and pocky Tetters.

The Business was to cure them both; the Woman suckled her Daughter, she proposed to put her out to nurse, but the Child's Situation would not permit her in Conscience to let her suckle another Woman whom she might have infected. I reflected that it was for the Welfare of the Child to be nursed by the Mother during this Course, that the Mercury circulating with the Blood of the Mother, would pass with the Milk into the Body of

the Child ; that since the Bark taken by the Nurse would cure the Child of a Fever, as I have experienced in a Merchant's Son of *Char-tron* ; for the same Reason Mercury administred by Frictions would cure both the Mother and the Child. In truth I did not dare to give any Purgatives to the Mother, for fear of giving the Child too great a Looseness: I therefore contented my self with using the Method by Extinction, at great Distances, which however I have repented ; for altho' the Symptoms disappeared the Disorder broke out again a Year after, which gave me an ill Opinion of the Method by Extinction, and we were obliged to put her under a new Course, only the Child seems to be well cured.

This Woman owned to me that she had been distempered long before her Wedding, and that she had Ulcers and pocky Tetters upon her Parts : Nevertheless she found Means of persuading her Husband that all the Disorder proceeded from him: She carried on her Disimulation even to reproach him very severely in my Presence, with a Stream of Tears, which she had at Command. " Did I deserve, says she, that an abandoned Wretch should put me into this Condition? should you have courted a young Person for her Destruction? unhappy Preference which I have given you &c."

XVI. OBSERVATION.

AN antient Warriour retired from Service, where he had met with several unlucky Adventures, for which he had been treated but superficially. Twelve Years after two Buboes appeared, which could not be brought to a laudable Suppuration; he had a tetterous Ulcer the Bigness of a Hand upon the Musculus Glutæus of the left Side, which voided abundance of Serum, by the Favour of which he seemed to be in good Health. This Humour was of so corrosive a Nature, that his Shirts were eaten away in the Place where they touched this Ulcer, and to save them he had pieces of Linnen fastened to the inside of them, which he changed every Day. We put him into the Course of our Remedy, according to our Method, and he was very well cured.

It is to be observed that the Frictions which were made upon this ulcerated Tetter, produced immediately a very great Effect, which arose without doubt, as has been remark'd in Observation II. of this Article, from hence that the Mercury rubbed into those Openings enters more easily than when it has the Skin to penetrate, and we were obliged to be upon our guard to prevent a Salivation, which threatened us several times.

XVII. OBSERVATION.

A Seafaring Man who had made a Voyage to *Guinea* in one of the *India* Company's Vessels, got in that Country a Gonorrhœa with an Inflammation of the right Testicle, for which he was under the Care of the Surgeon of the Ship. He told me that a Negro Woman, with whom he had an Affair through Curiosity, had made him this Present. He was 18 Months Abroad, and upon his Return he look'd out for his Mistress again, whom he had left in this Town, in good Health, thinking he might fall to his old Courses again with Safety; but he was very much surpris'd to see that the very first Night she had given him a Gonorrhœa with a Cordee, besides two Buboës and an inflammatory Tumour of the right Testicle, which was the same that had been infected in *Guinea*. I was called, and found that he used certain Prisons which a blind Man made him take with a Promise of a speedy Cure. This blind Man was come to the Manufactory among the Poor, and kept there for Charity, nevertheless he bragg'd of having some infallible Secrets to cure all sorts of Distempers, especially the Venereal.

I ordered the Patient to be blooded twice copiously for fear the Testicle should suppurate, and without using any preliminary Preparation I had him rubbed and purged vigorously; he was a young Man full of Juices, and I thought my self not obliged to prepare him.

By the use of these Frictions and Purges, I saw in 25 Days the swelling of the Groin, and the Gonorrhœa cured, and the Testicle restored to its natural Bigness, there not remaining any remarkable Hardness in the Epididymis as often happens, even after the Course.

XVIII. OBSERVATION.

A Man aged 55 Years had an obstinate Vomiting, for which they had applied many Remedies without Effect, as Emeticks, Narcoticks, Bleeding, Scorbuticks, &c. The Vomiting increased to that Degree, that he could neither take Broth or Ptisan but he brought it up immediately, with such terrible Straining, that he was grown so weak, that they judged proper to administer him the last Sacrament. I was sent for, and upon examining his Case with Messrs *de Manade* and *Casaux*, Surgeons, we found besides the Symptoms above recited, 1.) a considerable Tumour hard, painful, and bunching out, in the little Lobe of the Liver, which covers the Stomach. 2.) The Patient confessed he had 25 Years ago had several sorts of Disorders of Gallantry, which made us agree unanimously that he had the Pox a long time standing. 3.) He had a very considerable œdematous Swelling in his lower Extremities, which would bring on soon an Ascites and Collection of Water in the Abdomen.

Notwithstanding the miserable State I have represented I propose to those Gentlemen, who

saw him with me, a System for his Cure ; for I never have been of Opinion to let a Patient die without Remedies : I have a great Regard for a Thought of *Baglivius*. *Quamdiu anima in corpore remanet semper, aliquid ex admirabili arte nostra sperandum.* “ As long as the Soul remains “ in the Body, we may always hope something “ from our admirable Art.”

It seems the Patient had a long time had the Pox, this Tumour of the little Lobe of the Liver was occasioned by it, as *Verduc* has observed in his Surgery : The violent and obstinate Vomiting occasioned by the Tumour had raised the external Integuments to a large Bunch, so that there was room to believe it had taken up the same Dimensions within, and consequently must press the Stomach, and oblige it to throw up all Nourishment with Violence. Besides the Passage of the hepatick Artery being intercepted, the Blood rushed into the Gastrick; in greater Abundance, since they both arise from the Trunk of the *Cæliaca*, and the Fibres of the Stomach being stuffed, were more susceptible of Contraction.

To attack the Evil, in this Situation, in the Place where it might be cured, I judged it proper to disperse the Tumour by mercurial Frictions which I ordered to be made there every Day to half an Ounce a time with the *Emplastrum Diabotanium* over it. (2.) To remove the Weakness occasioned by straining to vomit, I forbid all Nourishment by the Mouth, both solid and liquid, since it not only
was

the VENEREAL DISEASE. 117

was useless, but also hurtful to him by the Weakness which remained after the straining to bring it up. I ordered instead thereof, to nourish him with Broth Clysters, to be given every four Hours, putting a little Wine to each as he was extremely weak.

After he had been nourished this way 17 Days, and after several Frictions which I intermitted some Days for fear of a Salivation, we found the Liver much softened. Then I began to let him take Nourishment again, which he kept without vomiting, and he appeared brisk, animated with the Hopes of a Cure. But as the Swellings still went on, the Discharge was made in the *Abdomen*, and some Days after the Patient died Dropsical: We made use of *martial and diuretick Aperitives*, but without Success.

R E M A R K I.

IF the Patient had been in full Strength, I should have made great Evacuations, as *Duret* advises, after the Example of *Hippocrates* and *Sydenham*, in his Treatise on the Dropsy; and I practise with Success, when the Evacuations by Urine, which are the most natural, will not answer; but his Strength would not permit it.

R E M A R K II.

THE nourishing Clysters stay'd with him entirely: Nature starved by a Vomiting during 3 Months, kept all to recover herself,

and in reality his Pulse seemed a great deal better; he went to Stool only once in 4 or 5 Days, and his Excrements were of a due Consistence.

R E M A R K I I I .

SOME will, perhaps, wonder that I undertook to support this Patient with Broth Clysters, against *Etmuller's* Advice, who in his *Chirurgia infusoria*, maintains, that it is impossible to give Nourishment that Way, *pag. 242. Quod autem de nutritione per clysteres dicitur falsum est, nulla namque alimenti ad nutritionem potest fieri adaptatio, nisi prius in Stomacho ab ejus fermento vitali insignitus sit caractere.* " But what is said about nourishing " by Clysters is false, for no Aliment can be " fitted for Nourishment, unless the Ferment " in the Stomach has first imprinted on it a " vital Character."

But by this Author's leave, the Fact is plain, and I should not have the Boldness to call two Surgeons of this Town for Eye Witnesses, if I had not Truth on my side. He was mistaken in this Point as in the Calumny he ventured to spread against the Faculty of *Paris*, which I have heard confuted at the Opening of the College by Mr. *Contagi* in 1698.

It cannot be denied but that *Etmuller's* Book is good. I have often compared it to an immense Fortune heaped up from the Ruins of many, but which would be insignificant,

nificant, if every one was to take his own. *Etmuller* lived too short a time to have seen all those Distempers himself of which he treats; it is even surprising that he could read the Books he quotes.

XIX. OBSERVATION.

A Man of a robust Complexion, well-limbed, and of a good size, who had been in the Army from his Youth, where he had distinguished and advanced himself through his Valour and good Conduct, had been afflicted for 3 Years with œdematous Swellings in his Legs. He had consulted all the physical Bodies in the Kingdom, or even Physicians in the Country of some Reputation; he left no Medicine untried that he was advised to, to prevent the Dropsy which he saw threatned him. And after he had attempted all in vain, they directed him to drink the Waters and bathe at *Baigneres*, which relieved him to that Degree, that he thought himself well cured. He went afterwards again to his Regiment, where he behaved like a prudent Man, and who is not willing to die, that is to say, he committed no Excess at Table, at Play, sitting up, &c. Notwithstanding his regular Living, he grew feeble and weakly 5 Months after his return from *Baigneres*, his lower Parts swell'd, and a great and hard Tumour was perceived in the great Lobe of his Liver; he had also a little slow Fever which returned irregularly, with a yellow Colour in his Face

and Body. These Accidents determined him to come to *Bourdeaux* to seek for Help.

During the Journey, which lasted 4 Days, he found himself tolerably well, which I attribute to the Motion of the Voiture. (You may read on this head *Sydenham*, *Baglivius*, and the Preface of Dr. *Hequet*, *de purganda medicina à curarum sordibus*.)

I saw him at his Arrival with a Surgeon, in whom the Patient reposed a great Confidence. We agreed, 1st, That the Fever was of such a Nature as not to be cured by the Bark; For daily Experience shews, that this Medicine doth not conquer slow Fevers proceeding from an Obstruction of the Liver, or of the other Viscera, from some internal Ulcer, or some essential Disorder in the Principles of the Blood; and that it is proper in no other Fever but the Intermittent, the Seat of which is placed in the first Passages, accompanied with red Urine, and a lateritious Sediment. We were of this Opinion so much the rather, because the Patient had taken of it 3 different Times in the Course of 3 Years, and never received any Benefit from it, but on the contrary, always had found himself the worse for it. 2^{dly}, Laying the Fever aside, and regarding it only as a Symptom from the Obstruction of the Liver, we should do all our Endeavours to remove this, being persuaded that the Fever would go off at the same time. 3^{dly}, That in consideration of the Greatness of the Tumour, which we judged to have commenced from

from the Time that the Patient begun to swell, it was not prudent for us to trust to simple Aperitives, as Drinks, Broths, Steel, Millepedes, lixivial Salts, Whey, &c. and that it was necessary also to call Mercury to Assistance, as a very powerful Deobstruent.

For these Reasons we agreed to attack the Tumour by internal and external Medicines. That externally we would apply Mercury by rubbing in daily some of the *Unguentum Neapolitanum* upon the Region of the Liver, applying the *Emplastrum Diabotanium* over it, and that internally we would make the Patient take the Waters of *Carensac* and *Balruc*; We hoped to find in these Waters not only a Purgative, which might prevent Salivation, but also a Deobstruent Quality, since Experience has taught us that these Waters are excellent in Obstructions of the Viscera.

We determined the rather upon these Frictions, since we had the following Reasons to strengthen us in our Advice. (1.) The Patient being in the Army from his Youth, and perhaps, among his lucky Adventures, he may have had some unfortunate Ones. (2.) He owned that in 1717, two Officers of his Regiment and himself had at *Paris* laid with one Woman; that his two Companions got the Pox, but that he received no hurt. (3.) The Obstinacy of his Distemper, which he had struggled with three Years, without finding out the true Medicine for his Cure: We had on this Account before us the celebrated *Zacutus*

tus Lusitanus's Observation, who in an obstinate Ophthalmia interrogated the Patient if he never had any Venereal Distemper, or if he had never known any infected Woman; he said no, but that he had one Night lain in the same Bed with a Man suspected to be poxed; this Conjecture only determined *Zacutus* to put him under a Course of Frictions, having tried sudorifick Ptisans, and after a copious Salivation the Patient recovered.

If to have laid one Night with a Friend who was suspected, determined this famous Practitioner to use this Remedy, attended with very good Success, we had a Suspicion much stronger than that, since the Patient had cohabited with a Woman who was poxed, as appears from the unhappy Fate of his two Companions.

(4.) We joined to all these Reasons, that tho' even nothing Venereal was suspected, the Tumour in itself seemed incurable without the Assistance of Mercury, and we had for our Confirmation the Authority of all good Practitioners, who in Obstructions of the Liver give the Preference to Mercury above all other Dissolvents.

For the rest, we would not exclude the Help we might expect from other Deobstruents, which were given in an Electuary, drinking Whey after it.

The Patient satisfied with our System, resolved to follow it punctually; he went into the Country with his Surgeon, was blooded
and

and purged, and began the Use of the Waters, without daring to apply the Ointment, the Fever shewing itself, and fatiguing him much. He came to Town again, a Consultation was called, my System was overruled by the Plurality of Voices, he was ordered to take the Bark, which he did but without Success. He had violent Pains in his Bowels and Kidneys, no Sleep or Rest. A new Consultation is called, on Account of a great Nauseating, a Dose of *Ipecacuana* was given him, which work'd perfectly well, nevertheless the Nauseating, the Pains and Restlessness continued. Recourse was had to another Consultation, Whey and Absorbents are ordered, the Distemper continues, and after a Course of 30 Days, a new Case appears, *viz.* two Buboes, hard, painful, and plainly to be seen one in each side of the Groin.

A new Consultation was called, and by a Plurality of Voices upon sight of the two Buboes it was resolved to make Frictions of 3 Drams or half an Ounce of mercurial Ointment each time, both upon the Small of the Back, where the Patient had a long time felt intolerable Pain, and also upon the Buboes which had just shown themselves. This Advice did not pass without some Dispute, the Fever being looked upon as an invincible Contraindication; besides Mercury, said those of a contrary Opinion, stirs up the grosser Salts, which it is necessary to dilute first, according to the *Aphorism*, *Corpora cum quis purgare voluerit fluxilia reddere oportet.*

oportet, " The Bodies to be purged ought " to be rendred fluid first." And that consequently the Remedy, in case it were proper, could not be administred 'till the Fever was quenched, the Patient's Strength repaired, and his Blood diluted by the use of Whey, the Bath, &c.

To this it was answered, that the Fever, which had resisted the Bark during a Month, was absolutely not to be conquered but by Mercury, which only was capable of destroying the Tumour and Obstruction of the Liver, and the Cause which had produced it; the Proof of which will appear in the Article following. (2.) That it was useless to think of Restoratives, since nothing could add to the Excellency of his Broth, notwithstanding which he fell away and grew weaker daily, being wore out by Pain and want of Rest, and that the most precious Aliments were incapable of replacing that wasting, 'till the Blood was purified, according the Aphorism, *Impura corpora, quo plus nutries eo magis lædes*. " The more you " nourish impure Bodies, the more you hurt " them." (3.) That the pretended Preparation for diluting the Blood could not be done, for the Patient would die before he had gone through half of the Preparation proposed, and that there were Cases which Necessity obliged us to step out of the Road, which might have been kept if the Patient's Strength had permitted it; that in the present Case we ought to follow *Cornelius Celsus* his Doctrine, *In præ-*
cipiti

*capiti periculo multa recte fiunt quæ alias omit-
tenda forent.* " In imminent Danger many
" Things may be done which otherwise should
" be omitted." The same Author also says,
*Satius est etiam remedium anceps experiri, quam
ægrotantem certo exitio relinquere.* " It is also
" better to try a dangerous Medicine, than to
" leave the Patient to certain Destruction."
Notwithstanding it was ordered by a Plurality
of Voices, that the Patient should bathe some-
times before the Frictions, altho' this seemed
to be contrary, by the Swellings he had in
the lower Parts, and which had increased con-
siderably during his Illness.

After the third Bath, which procured him
neither Ease of his Pain, nor Sleep, but in-
creased considerably the Swelling of the lower
Parts, the Patient demanded absolutely the
Frictions. He received the Sacraments with
a Devotion which seemed very edifying to me
for a Person belonging to the Army. The
first Friction was made, the 22d of *June*, upon
the Loins, the *Os Sacrum*, and the two Bu-
boes, to the Quantity of 3 Drams of the Oint-
ment: the 23d, the like Frictions at the same
Hour. It surprised us agreeably to see that
the second Friction appeased the Pain; the 3d,
was given the Day following. Besides the
Cessation of Pain, the Person slept quietly, and
the Fever and Swelling of the Liver, the two
chief Objects in view, abated. On the 25th,
the Patient had such a copious Vomiting dur-
ing 24 Hours, that the Evacuations amounted

to 12 Pounds, and after a Consultation the 26th, we gave him half a Dram of *Theriaca Andromachi*, with 8 Drops of Liquid Laudanum, which immediately stop'd the Vomiting.

I believe this great Vomiting was occasioned by the Obstruction of the Bilious Canal being removed. The Mercury having cleared away the Impediment, the Bile emptied itself in a full Stream, like a Torrent kept back when the Sluice is removed, and brought on this great Vomiting.

Nature substituted in lieu of this Evacuation upwards, a plentiful Discharge by Urine; at the Bottom of the Pot was perceived a Crystallization of Salt, which made us hope for good Success from this Remedy.

Besides the Diminution of the Tumour of the Liver, which was lessened by one half, and the rest considerably softned, the Fever almost gone, the Evacuation by Urine not weakening the Patient, and his Legs and Thighs being very much decreased; all this made us expect an happy Event.

Amidst all these fine Hopes an Hæmorrhage intervened, which the Patient was subject to, and was so obstinate and copious, that we found it hard to stop it; and we perceived that the Abdomen swelled with a Fluctuation, and Difficulty of Breathing. This Hæmorrhage quite demolished his Strength which was very low, at the time the Frictions were begun; The Flux of Urine changed into a Looseness, which

which became lenterical, and the Patient died the 15th of *September*.

The Corps being opened, we found the Abdomen full of Water, which had swelled it prodigiously, and in his last Days he could hardly respire, because the Quantity of Water in the Abdomen would not permit the Diaphragma to flatten, as is necessary for Respiration; the Liver was considerably lessened in Bulk and in Hardness, the two Buboes were still hard, the rest of the Viscera pretty natural.

R E M A R K I.

ALTHO' these last two Patients died drop-fical, yet if you examine their Cases without Prejudice, it cannot be denied that the mercurial Ointment is very efficacious in Obstructions of the Viscera; and the Event would have been different if the Patients had begun where they ended. Accordingly, I always had in my Mind the Advantages we reaped from these Frictions in dispersing the Obstructions of the Liver, and I have since made use of them with incredible Success, as will be seen in the third Article of this Chapter.

The fatal Dropsy would have been prevented, if at the time whilst the Patient was strong, the first 40 Days, when he suffered Night and Day cruelly, these Frictions had been administred, since then he was in a Situation to undergo a greater Number of them,
stronger

stronger Doses, and the Effect of them, whereas the Dropsy probably gained Ground upon him, encouraged by the Baths, when we commenced the Frictions after he had received the Sacraments.

R E M A R K II.

THE Fever which accompanies the Obstructions of the Viscera is not a Symptom which contra-indicates the Frictions, since it diminished in Proportion as the Tumour lessened. We shall introduce a Proof of this Fact in the following Observation, and make it appear that the Fever has ceased entirely with the Obstructions.

R E M A R K III.

AS the Pain diminished after the first and second Frictions, and ceased entirely after the third, it proves plainly that Nature was treated as she liked, and that the Symptoms disappeared by reason that we had attacked the true Cause of the Disorder.

XX. OBSERVATION.

A Man aged 45 Years, complained of an habitual numb'd Pain in his Bowels, which increased considerably every Night. Besides this ordinary Pain, he had from time to time violent Returns, which seized him in such a manner, that he thought he should die of it; this was accompanied with a Vomiting, and he found himself easier when a Looseness came upon

upon it. Moreover he had Pains between his Shoulders, in his Loins, and upon the *Os Sacrum*, which tormented him alternately. When he was seated, he could hardly rise without stirring up his Pains; he was become lean, weak, round shoulder'd and crooked, so that he seemed to have lost near half a Foot of his Height.

During 7 or 8 Years that he had been out of order, he had tried every thing, by the Advice of a Physician of *Paris*, another of *Montpelier*, and of several in the Country, without being Cured, or finding any considerable Relief.

Recourse was had to frequent Evacuations, by Bleeding, Purging, and Clysters. They eased the Patient for the present, but it was observed that the Paroxysms returned more frequently, and with more Violence.

One Physician looked on these Pains as an Effect of some Leaven of an intermittent Fever in Disguise, because the Complaint returned every Night, and endeavour'd to cure it with the Bark, according to *Morton's* Doctrine, *De protei formæ febris intermittētis genio*, but in vain.

Another thought it was Convulsions, and to calm the Pains, he put him in a Course of *Antispasmodic* Medicines, which he continued a long time without Effect.

A famous Physician promised to cure him, imagining those before him had not known the Cause of his Distemper, and believed it was a saline Disposition of his Blood, which

he endeavoured to correct by a long Use of Whey, Eggshells, red Coral, Crabs Eyes, &c. but he was not more successful than the others.

It would be tedious and useless to enumerate here all the Medicines the Patient had tried, to get rid of a Distemper which had fatigued him 7 or 8 Years. At last, he resolved to call a Consultation of 3 Physicians, of which I was one with those who had miss'd his Case before.

After we had taken into Consideration the Obstinacy of his Distemper, which seemed to be exasperated by every thing that was done, and the Patient confess'd that in his Youth he had had some Venereal Complaints, which however had been well cured; and tho' his Wife and Children were sound and clean, we judged unanimously that some Venereal Taint produced all these Disorders, according to the *Aphor.* of Baglivius quoted above, *In pertinacibus virorum morbis semper suspicandum de Lue Gallica.* And we were of Opinion that he must be condemned to pass through the Frictions; which was executed accordingly.

As we did not agree about the manner of administering them, and the Effect they would produce, the Patient chose that which was most convenient and easiest as is commonly done; that is to say the Frictions by Extinction at great Intervals, without any sensible Evacuation. I advised him to follow my Method, so much the rather as he was always easy when he went frequently to Stool.

The

The Frictions were administred at Intervals, to 5 Drams every time; after the Patient had bore them a long while, he found no Benefit therefrom, but an increase of Pain in his Thigh, which he never had felt before.

The Patient in despair to find that none of the Medicines hit right, came and prayed me to examine his Case over again. I thought I must relinquish all the Notions under which it had been considered before, and after many serious Reflexions, I concluded we had been all three mistaken in our Consultation, and that all his Complaints proceeded from a Disorder of the insensible Transpiration, and that it ought to be distinguish'd by the Name of internal and external Rheumatism.

I found every thing squared with this Notion; the ease he perceived from a Looseness, which, according to *Hippocrates*, supplies the Defect of Transpiration: *Cutis densitas alvi laxitas & vice versa*. His Pains increased at Night in the manner of Rheumatisms, the external Parts were fatigued with the Pain as well as the internal, and the Patient had cleared all the Suspicion from the Errors of his Youth, by the Course he had gone through in vain. No fault could be found with his Stomach, which was good, and did its Functions when the Matter of the insensible Transpiration lodged there was carried off either by a natural or artificial Evacuation; no Gout repell'd could be suspected, no Scurvy, &c. Nothing remained under our Consideration but a considerable

able Suppression or Diminution of the insensible Transpiration, which fell in great Quantity upon the Intestines, and being accumulated to a certain Point caused the violent Fits, and brought the Patient to Despair.

As he is a Man of Sense and great Judgment, he came willingly into this way of thinking, by reason of the two following Circumstances, which however he never had mentioned to us.

I. Circumstance, He was in perfect Health, when one Morning, on the Road to *Paris* he was seized with a Pain all over his Body, because he had lain in damp Sheets. His Disorder had continued ever since; all the Remedies have missed it, there not having been applied any which could restore the free Course of the considerable Evacuation, which in the natural State is made by the insensible Transpiration, which according to the Observations and Experiments of *Sanctorius* surpasses all the others together.

II. Circumstance, This Reflexion is also strengthened by the Cessation of a sensible and daily Evacuation, which the Patient had in his Arm-pits, and which those Glands furnished in such abundance, that when he leaned his Arm horizontally against a Wall or Chimney, one might see the Sweat come by Drops from those Glands. This Evacuation ceased since his Disorder, so that one may judge plainly that this Humour is the occasion of his Complaint, which finding the accustomed Canals stopp'd

stopp'd up, falls upon the Intestines and the External Parts.

Add to these two Circumstances, that the Patient who before his Disorder had a soft and soapy Skin, has now a hard, dry, and parch'd Skin, a certain Proof that the Matter of the insensible Transpiration takes no more that Course, and that his Vessels are choak'd up, and most part grown useless.

From these Facts it follows, that no Cure is to be expected but from the return of these two Evacuations; the Pores for want of Use are weakned, and their Canals, as it were, glued up; consequently, the most natural, and at the same time the most efficacious Means is to soak the Body in the Waters of *Bareges* divers times, and to drink of them every Day 5 or 6 large Glasses full.

No other Baths are so proper; for altho' the hot and boiling Springs at *Bagneres* are capable of producing great Evacuations by Sweat, yet as they cannot procure Suppleness to the Skin, and the excretory Canals of the insensible Transpiration, the Preference ought to be given to the Waters of *Bareges*, which have that Vertue.

The Pores evacuating Sweat are different from those which serve for insensible Transpiration, those are great and open, but in a small Number; these are very small, but infinite in Number, and their great quantity makes up for their Smallness, as *Lewenboeck* has observed. Hence it is that *Sanctorius* has experienced the

Evacuation by Sweat, is less than that by insensible Transpiration, and that a Body which Sweats loses less in Weight, than that which transpires. You may read *Monf. Noques's* Quotations upon *Sanctorius's* Aphorisms.

The Drinking of the purgative Waters beforehand seemed also useless to me, not to say hurtful ; for as the principal End which we should not swerve from, and the chief Object which we ought not to lose sight of, are to re-establish the free Course of the Humours of the sensible and insensible Transpiration, every Attempt to procure Evacuations by Stool would be wrong, by drawing from the Circumference to the Center, at the time when to secure the Stomach and Bowels, we should push from the Center to the Circumference.

This Reason is conformable to the Authority of *Hippocrates* quoted above, *Alvi laxitas cutis densitas, alvi densitas cutis laxitas*. And *Willis's* Experience and Observations shew the Truth of this important and practical Maxim.

I also forbid the Patient, if he had any Confidence in my Advice, not to drink the purging Waters at his return from *Bareges*. That would have been losing the Advantage from the Waters of *Bareges*, if after having recovered by their Means the Suppleness of the Skin, restored the excretory Canals of the insensible Transpiration to their former State, put again as it were Nature in Possession of her natural Sewers, one should put these Fluids into a quite opposite Motion, by hurrying them
off

off by Stool, and calling them back to the Stomach and Bowels, from whence Pains had been taken to drive them away, to thrust them towards the Canals of the insensible Transpiration.

This Advice was observed in every Particular; the Patient met with good Success, and was delivered from all his Pains both internal and external. He was crooked and bent, and returned streight; his Skin is soft as if rubbed with Oil; he has had no return of any Cholic, and is as fat and fresh coloured as ever he was in his Life. His Cure has made him conceive a favourable Idea of Physick, of which he before had but an indifferent Opinion; he even consecrates to it one of his Sons, whom he had designed for another Occupation.

R E M A R K I.

THIS Observation shews, as we have said in the first Part, how careful you ought to be to examine well the Symptoms which determine the Existence of the Pox, that you may not be mistaken as we all three were in the present Case; it is a sad thing for the Physician, but worse for the Patient, to put him under a Course from which he received no other Fruit except a Pain in his Thigh which he had not before.

R E M A R K II.

THE Defect of the insensible Transpiration is often said to be the Cause of
K 4 Distem-

Distempers, but I believe this is even oftner the Case than is imagined. And without falling into the extreme with those who think that all Disorders come from thence, one may boldly affirm that an infinite Number of Disorders proceed from the Suppression of the insensible Transpiration. We frequently read in *Hippocrates's* Writings, *Incaluit et alfit*. "He was hot and burnt." *Sydenham* is of Opinion that that Cause kills more People than the Plague, Famine, or the Sword taken all together, *Plures eo solo vitio quam vel peste, vel fame, vel gladio simul unitis omnibus, interire*; accordingly *Sanctorius* reprimands the Physicians of his Time and Nation, *Medicorum nostratum plurimi sola Venæsectione vel purgatione morbos omnes curare satagunt, et de insensibili transpiratione ne vel somniant quidem*, Aph. 61. Sect. 1. "Most of our Physicians endeavour to cure all Distempers by Bleeding and Purg-
ing, and never take any Notice of the Dis-
charges by insensible Transpiration.

R E M A R K III.

THE chief Efficacy of the Waters of *Bareges* seems to me to depend from their restoring the insensible Transpiration, and 'tis for this Reason they are a sovereign Remedy in many different Complaints. This balsamick Spring softens the Skin, relaxes the Crispature of its Fibres, which choaked up the excretory Canals of the insensible Transpiration; it unlocks the Concretions in them, and puts Na-
ture

ture in Possession of this great Opening, thro' which she empties the greatest Part of the Excrements of the Body.

R E M A R K IV.

IT is also by restoring the insensible Transpiration that the Exercise on Horse-back is useful, efficacious, and wholesom in all chonical Diseases, as has been observed by divers Authors, *Materia morbum committens hoc exercitii genere in corporis habitum protruditur. Sydenham.* "The morbid Matter is by this Sort of Exercise protruded into the Habit of the Body." And it is not to be doubted that the Horse increases the insensible Transpiration, since *Sanctorius* and *Kiel* make it appear, that by this Exercise the Body loses considerably of its Weight. We shall have an Opportunity of treating more largely on this Head in the Dissertation on Consumptions at the End of this Work.

R E M A R K V.

THE surprising Effect of a milk Diet ought chiefly to be ascribed to its restoring the insensible Transpiration. Milk taken for constant Nourishment softens and extends the Fibres of the Skin, which you may easily conceive from the Softness of the Skin, which appears oily and soapy some Days after you have lived upon Milk, whereas before it was dry and hard. This Aliment, which is Chyle, prepared to your hand, gives way, and resists
in

in no wise the Impulse of the Heart and Arteries, and without any Difficulty is carried to the Capillary Ramifications in the Surface of the Body.

R E M A R K VI.

THE Event of this Observation has made me advise with good Success, in terrible Cholicks, where Purgatives only stimulated, the Use of Medicines operating by Transpiration: long lasting Cholicks, which often degenerate into Palsies, are owing to the Want of Perspiration. Diaphoreticks are sovereign in these Cases. I had on my side, besides, the Experiment in *Baglivi's* Aphorism, L. 1. *de praxi medica, Colica Epidemica à vini acido potissimum oriunda diaphoreticis curatur.* "The epidemic Cholick proceeding chiefly from the acid in Wine, is cured by Diaphoreticks." The Observation of *Amatus Lusitanus* *curat.* 32. cent. 1. who cured these Sort of Cholicks with a Decoction of *Guaiaum* in Wine. And lastly, *Riverius's* Observation, who advises, when all Medicines have failed, the animal Diaphoretic, that is, the Infusion of Horse-dung. We shall, perhaps, one Day shew in a Treatise *de Medicina Burdegalsium*, that Cholicks may be cured various ways by divers kinds of Remedies quite different, answering the several Causes that produce it.

SECOND ARTICLE.

Containing some Observations upon the Method by Salivation, which appeared to me deserving of some Attention.

I. OBSERVATION.

A Servant to an Officer belonging to the Court of Parliament, had long been ill of the Pox, he was grown very lean, and had a slow Fever, which returned by unequal Periods. One of his Testicles was considerably swell'd; he was so hoarse that one could hardly understand him, he had Pustules in his Head, Tetters about his Parts, &c. his Master out of Charity was willing to get him cured. I thought him not in a Condition to undergo any Preparation, we therefore ply'd him briskly with the Frictions, which lessened his Fever by degrees till it was entirely gone; the Swelling of the Testicle also diminished, and this Part was reduced to its natural State, altho' the Salivation was not very considerable. Afterwards he became by the Use of Milk, which we made him take at the end of this Course, fresh, fat, and vigorous, and has continued in good Health ever after, tho' it is now more than 15 Years since that Affair.

Some, perhaps, will wonder that I administered the Frictions to a Patient who was emaciated and weak, without preparing him before

fore by Bleeding, Purging, Bathing, drinking of Whey, Ptisan, &c. To which I answer that there are certain Cases where we should lay aside the common Rules. *Ars est interdum ab arte recedere.* "There is an Art in varying "sometimes from Art itself." This Patient had in a manner nothing left but a Spark of Life; if I had employed the few Days, and little Strength he had remaining in Preparations, he would have died in the mean time. Wherefore I judged we must immediately apply the Specific, as we give the Bark in certain Cases in great Doses, to prevent violent Returns accompanied with some dangerous Symptoms, as Drowsiness, Delirium, Hæmorrhages, *Cholera morbus*, &c. Besides, Sydenham banishes all these preliminary Preparations, as you may read in his Treatise on the Pox. *Ubi primum accersor statim unguentum præscribo misso hoc damnosò præludio.* "As soon as I am "call'd I prescribe the Ointment laying aside "that prejudicial Flourish.

This Observation shews that the hectic Fever with irregular Periods accompanying the Pox, admits of no other Remedy but Mercury, since in proportion as the Medicine took effect, it disappeared. That the Swellings of the Testicles gave way to the Frictions, which we shall prove more at large by the succeeding Observations.

II. OBSERVATION.

A Man, 42 Years of Age, had formerly been afflicted with the Venereal Disorder, for which he had been obliged to pass thro' the grand Remedy; he afterwards married to avoid the like Mischance. Whilst his Wife was in Childbed, that he might not be idle, he went to see a Woman who gave him a Chancre, the like of which I never had seen before, except once at *Paris* in a Shopkeeper's Journeyman: This Ulcer without exaggeration, was as big as a Thumb-nail, on one side of the Bridle; it soon eat into the Urethra, through which opening he has always made Water since, even after he was cured.

The fear of a Salivation, the Severity of which he had experienced already, the Shame of his Condition, and the Apprehension of the Reproaches from his Wife, would not permit him to take proper Measures to stop the Progress of his Disorder, 'till the Fever, his Fretting, Pains, and grievous Reflexions had made him very lean, and extreamly weak.

As he was Head of a Family, necessary to his Children and the Publick, notwithstanding there was Danger of his dying in the Operation, I put him under the Course of the grand Remedy. I have a great Value for a Thought of *Baglivi's*, who compares Nature overwhelmed by some Distemper to a Man fallen into a Ditch; if you throw him down a Pole he makes Use of it, sometimes by putting

ting his Feet upon it, and sometimes by taking it in both his Hands, and lifting himself up with it, until by its Assistance he gets out of the Ditch. In like manner, if you tender a Remedy to Nature, she turns and winds it about 'till she finds a convenient Means of procuring herself Health by it.

After many Reflexions I formed the following Plan. The Patient is not in a Situation to support a Salivation to that degree as is necessary for a perfect Cure, therefore we must treat him at two times. By the first Course we shall clear away Part of the Venereal Leaven; by some particular Frictions we shall raise a slight Spitting, such as the Patient's Forces are able to bear, the Blood being thus depurated in Part, the Patient will gain Strength and Flesh, and we shall then be able to go through a compleat Course in due Form. I proposed my System to the Patient, who consented to it. We went to Work, and after a slight Preparation we gave him four Frictions on the upper and lower Extremities, and the Parts of Generation. They procured us a Ptialism, little indeed, but well conditioned as to the Smell and Consistence of the Spittle; and tho' it lasted but a Fortnight, it carried away the Fever and all the other Symptoms, the Ulcer was healed, and the Patient put into a Condition to make use of Milk, which made him grow strong and fleshy; and he was so well that he thought himself cured, and would hear nothing about another Salivation. However,

even, at the End of 6 Months, he began to grow lean again, he lost his Appetite, and a slow Fever attended him, which he endeavoured in vain to cure with the Bark. At last he determined to pass through a compleat Salivation, and after a Spitting of 25 or 30 Days he was perfectly well, and during 18 Years enjoy'd good Health.

Who would think that a Man whom Venus has used so ill, and who has gone through 3 Salivations, should not have reformed his Ways? Yet such is the force of Constitution and Custom, that after his Wife's Death, who died of a Consumption, he fell to his old Trade with his Maids again, whom he changed frequently; and met at last with one who gave him two Buboës in the Groin, which came to Suppuration, and discharged so abundantly, that he grew very lean and hectic, and at last died of the Pox.

R E M A R K I.

THOSE who have had Venereal Disorders, and have taken a great deal of Mercury, are more difficult to salivate than others, either because Nature grows used to Mercury, or that the small Ulcers of the salival Glands which are cicatrized are more difficult to open, or lastly, for some other Reason unknown to me. But I always observed when I cured People by Salivation, that I brought those who had taken much Mercury,

cury, with more difficulty to a Spitting than others.

R E M A R K II.

TH E S E sort of Patients, tho' ever so well cured, take an Infection sooner, if any ways they expose themselves to it, than such as never have had it. I have sometimes compared this Disposition to a Candle that has been lighted, which sooner catches Fire when it is held near it, than one that has never burnt. The physical Reason of this Phænomenon appears to me to depend upon the Disposition of the absorbent Pores, which are very open in these Persons: As all sorts of Grain do not equally bear in every kind of Ground, so likewise the Venereal Worms do not cling to every Person alike. Several Men have lain with the same Woman, some of which have catch'd the Distemper, and others escaped; the Texture of the Parts being more or less close may also contribute thereto, it has also been observed, that a Person in Liquor is more susceptible of it than one who is sober.

III. OBSERVATION.

A Young Merchant, a Stranger, and great Libertine, having caught the Pox about 5 Years since; among other Symptoms, he had a Tumour on his Yard, of the Bigness of an Egg; it was in the *Corpus cavernosum*, and press'd the *Urethra* in such a manner, that he could not make Water without straining hard, which

which made him void his Excrements at the same time. We put him under a Course of Frictions, which raised a laudable and copious Salivation, and we had the Pleasure of seeing this Swelling vanish gradually, untill the Part was reduced to its natural State again.

R E M A R K I.

THE good Success I had in destroying this Tumour with Mercury, as also that of the Testicle mentioned in the first Observation, encouraged me to attempt the Destruction of Swellings in other Parts, both internal and external, as will be seen in the last Article.

IV. OBSERVATION.

A Man of a melancholy Disposition, strong and robust, had the Misfortune to get a Clap at the Age of 26 in *Italy*, where he then travelled. The Distemper disappeared after some slight Remedies, and the Patient continued his Travels, without taking any farther Notice of this Adventure. Eighteen Years after a Polypus appeared on his Nose, for which Reason he went to *Paris*, and had it extirpated; three Years after that another came, he went again to *Paris*, and suffered the Operation a second time, his Condition being never suspected in the least, either by himself or the Surgeons who performed the Operation. He marries 15 Years after the abovementioned Adventure, without thinking himself disordered,

-L

and

and having in a manner forgot it, he is neither suspected, nor has he any Mistrust himself. During the time he was married he felt various Pains, which they call'd Rheumatic, and for which he drank Asses Milk, used the Bath, was Blooded and Purged, &c.

Seventeen Years after his Marriage an Exostosis appeared on his Leg, which was examined in a private Consultation, unknown to his Wife. Tho' the Affair was looked upon to proceed from an ordinary Cause, the Plurality of Opinions was that he should take an Electuary with some *Mercurius Dulcis* in it, which he used a long time.

Two Years after the same Gentleman in a Consultation agreed that they had been mistaken, since a great many Symptoms appeared of a confirmed Pox, a Tetter about the Parts of Generation, a slow Fever returning irregularly, Pustules with Scabs all over the Body, a Tumour spreading over the Pectoral Muscle of the right Arm, with the Exostosis beforementioned.

The Advice of those who proposed to put him without delay under a Course of Frictions did not prevail; the Bark was ordered to stop the Fever, and Partridge and Craw-fish Soops to strengthen him; and whilst they endeavoured to spin out the Time to come to a fine Season, the Symptoms increased, and the Patient died.

R E M A R K I.

THIS Pox, which after 32 Years, kill'd the Patient, was not altogether idle, for the two Polypuses which appeared on his Nose at different times were the Produce thereof; also the Pains which obliged him to go to the Waters of *Baigneres*, and to use divers Medicines; besides other Complaints, which they gave a favourable turn to in Behalf of the Patient, were Symptoms in Disguise of a hidden Pox. The Exostosis on his Tibia two Years before his Death, was a formal and undoubted Sign of it, and if the Disease had been known in time, and he had been put under the Course of Frictions, he would have been cured; but the Prudence and good Conduct, which the Patient had observed many Years, stifled all kind of Jealousy, on account of his former Adventure.

R E M A R K II.

THE irregular Returns of the Fever, complicated with a low Fever, did not at all fall under the Management of the Bark; accordingly he took a whole Month large Doses of well chosen Bark without any Benefit. The first Reason is, because a Fever which is a Symptom of the Pox, is not to be cured but in Proportion as the Venereal Infection is destroyed, as *Baglivi* observes in his Aphorisms. *Febris hectica Gallorum quamvis pro deplorata babeatur, tollitur ablato luis Venereæ Seminio.* "The

“ Hætic Fever of the *French* altho’ despaired of
“ is cured when the Seeds of the Venereal Di-
“ stemper are removed.” The second is, because
the Bark is a Specific in intermittent Fevers on-
ly, which have their Seat, as some imagine,
in the first Passages; but it loses its Credit and
Reputation in Fevers proceeding from a Disorder
in the Blood, or from some local Defect
of some internal Part. And I have always ob-
served that if the Bark doth not stop the Fe-
ver in 7 or 8 Days, it is to no Purpose to con-
tinue its use any longer, as I shall observe in
the Dissertation on Consumptions.

R E M A R K III.

I Have seen Persons perish by Reason that
their Strength was jugded insufficient to sup-
port the grand Remedy, and that it was at-
tempted to restore first their Vigour and Flesh,
stop the Fever and wait for a favourable
Season. But it must be owned that this
Notion clashes with Experience and Reason.
(1.) Because when the Blood is corrupted to a
certain Degree, the most precious Aliments and
the most exact Diet are incapable of stem-
ming the rapid Course of the Disease, which
hurries the Patient to his End. (2.) When
the Distemper is come to this Point, it is to
be feared it will break in upon the solid Parts,
and destroy some Organ which it is not in the
Power of Medicine to restore. I have seen
some who lost their Nose, the Bone being rot-
ten, the Teguments sunk in after the Cure of
the

the Pox, and they retained this Deformity all their Life time: Others have had a Hole pierced through the Urethra, through which they always have made Urine; so that you can never be too early in curing this Distemper. *Tardare enim in talibus malum est. Hipp. in Aph.* (For to delay in such Disorders is bad.)

For my part, notwithstanding the weak Condition the Patient may be in, the Danger I run of exposing my Reputation, or that of the Medicines I use, I always apply them in Proportion to the Strength of the Patient indeed, but in such a Manner as to expect a Cure. For which I quote a Thought of *Baglivi*. *Quamdiu anima in corpore remanet semper aliquid ex admirabili arte nostra sperandum.... ut quod sentio fatear sola remedia sanant, et ubicunque Scientiæ substituerit infirmitas, sola remedia pondus et majestatem ejusdem restituent.* "As long as the Soul stays in the Body we may hope for something surprising from our Art. And to say what I think, the Medicines only heal, and where Knowledge is deficient, the Remedies sustain its Weight and Majesty."

V. OBSERVATION.

NINETEEN Years after the Person's Death mentioned, in the precedent Observation, his Widow was seized with a violent Pain in her Womb, which she endured a great while without complaining; a slow Fever ensued, accompanied with some sensible Re-

turns. Bleeding, Purging, the Bark, Whey Baths, &c. were made use of, but without Success. After many Medicines had been given a Surgeon examined the Womb, which he found hard and swelled, the internal Orifice hard and callous. This Hardness run along the long Ligaments into the Thighs, especially the Left. I was called in Consultation, I had been formerly his Physician in ordinary. . . . I said I knew that her Husband had died of the Pox 19 Years before, that indeed after his Death, altho' she perceived no Symptoms at all of the Pox, and seemed to be in good Health, she had nevertheless taken things by way of Precaution, by the Advice of the Physicians of the Faculty of *Paris*, of which Dr. *Cartiere* was one, whom I had formerly heard in the Physical Schools at *Paris*. These Remedies consisted in Bleeding, Purging, Baths, Whey turned with Fumitory, and wild Succory; afterwards sudorifick Ptisans, and some Doses of the Panacea; that those Ptisans had a good Effect; that the Year after this Course, the Patient had a Swelling in her Breast, which alarm'd her very much, for which she took a great many Medicines; Mercury was applied externally upon the Tumour, with a Plaister of Diabotanium over it. Internally she took Steel Medicines, Millepedes, fix'd and terrestrious Alkali's, aperitive Salts, and Whey; that these Medicines reduced the Swelling, and that it quite went away by pumping upon it the Waters of *Bareges*, which she also drunk,
by

by the Advice of Messrs. *la Cartiere*, *Betsiere*, and *Triboleau*.

To this I added, that the same Disposition of the Blood, which had formed the Tumour in the Breast, might also have occasioned the Obstruction and Disorder in the Womb, and its Ligaments; that *Hippocrates* and *Duretus* make mention of a great Affinity betwixt the Breast and the Parts of Generation, the Disorders of the one being often transferred to the other. *Mammæ et uterus jure Societatis se mutuo afficiunt, mutuasque tradunt operas mulierum rebus tam bonis quam malis. Duret. p.483.* That there was some Suspicion on account of the Death of her Husband, and that possibly the Pox could not exert itself as long as she had her *Menses*, they carrying off some of the Infection, and that Notice ought to be taken, that she found herself ill as soon as they left her; that she had a considerable Tetter on her Belly. But tho' these Proofs were laid aside, and no Fault found with the Ashes of the Dead, the Unprofitableness of the Remedies that had been applied during three Months, the Progress which the Distemper had made in that time, the great Leanness of the Patient, who before was of a jolly Habit, the Extent and Perseveration of the Pain, and Fever, I thought shewed plainly that Recourse ought to be had to mercurial Frictions, and that to so great an Evil this great Remedy ought to be opposed. *Extremis extrema.* (Desperate Remedies to desperate Diseases.) That

since the Tumour of the Breast had been diminished by Mercury, that of the Womb which proceeded from the same Cause might be so likewise, and that we might reasonably expect and promise to destroy by this grand Remedy the principal Source of all these Disorders. That I had on my side not only the Authority of the best Practitioners, in proposing it, who look upon Mercury as a great Dissolvent, but also a recent Experience, very analogous to this Case, upon a Man of Distinction, whose Testicles were swelled, which I dissipated by my Method, as will be seen in the Observation following: And since in Parts hanging down, distant from the Torrent of Circulation, so great an Effect was perceived, we might expect the same with more Probability in an internal Part moistened with so many Blood Vessels, where the Mercury would pass in great Abundance.

My Advice was not seconded, and the Upshot of the Consultation was, that she should not continue Sweetners of the Blood, the *Os Sepiæ*, Chicken Water, the Bark, &c. Matters went from bad to worse. I was called again in Consultation 12 Days after, I persisted in my Opinion, but was alone again. However, the Patient's Relations and Friends gave some Attention to my Notion, and pray'd me to draw up her Case to send it to the Faculty of *Montpelier*. Those Gentlemen did me the Honour of ordering the Frictions; but the Answer arrived the Day after her Funeral.

REMARK

R E M A R K.

IT must be owned that Persons of Fashion and the Rich often die through too much Advice. When the Case is doubtful, several Physicians and Surgeons are sent for; a Prig, who dares not do as he should, and inclines to gentle Means, shall be reputed prudent and wise, whilst a Physician who gives his Opinion like an honest Man, and goes upon a good Foundation and Experience, shall pass for too enterprising; and how ingenuous soever the Patient is otherwise, he shall incline to the gentlest Side, tho' foreign to the true Scope.

In the last Consultation For this Patient her Family Physician came seemingly into my Sentiment, but he gave for a Reason, that she would be angry if she knew that Mercury had been so much as mentioned. *Non eris amicus Cæsaris.* (You'll not be Cæsar's Friend.)

People are too much inclined to think, that a Person of Distinction is not to be treated in the same Manner as a Citizen or Servant, as if the Frame of the Body of the one differed from that of the other; and as if we had two Methods of Practice, one for Persons of high Rank, and another for the common People. I allow regard should be had to their different Manner of Living, to the Tenderness of their Complexions, and many other Circumstances, which should determine us to take different Measures, either as to the Doses, or the Care in administering the Medicines: But as to the Sorts of Remedies, they

they are the same for the one and the other; and it would be carrying Subordination too far, to think ourselves not obliged to use certain Medicines because we are Great or Rich.

I will relate here, that in 1726. I was called to see an only Daughter of a Counsellor of an Inferior Court: This much beloved and very lovely Child eat at all Hours, and did as she pleased. She was about 6 Years old, and the Errors she was allowed to commit in her Regimen of Life, had stuffed her with Worms and Corruption: She fell into a Fever with a little oppressed Pulse, accompanied with Reathings to vomit, and grew Sick, that she could hardly hold up her Head, and delirious, not knowing her Aunt, who was very fond of her, and whom in Return she loved better than her own Mother.

I thought it necessary to empty this Child, I ordered her a strong purging Clyster, and presently after its Operation, half an Ounce of Emetic Wine. An intimate Friend of the Child's Father, tho' otherwise a Man of good Sense, spoke to me in this Manner; "Have
" you weigh'd well that this is an only Daugh-
" ter, and the Hopes of the Family. Dare
" you venture so precious a Child? &c." I answered him, that for that very Reason it was of Consequence to preserve her, that the Remedy I had ordered was the only one I could have any Expectation from; that the News Papers had informed us lately, that the King had taken some of it in an Illness he had; that since they had

had not scrupled to give the King some of this Emetick, he should let me go on, &c. The Medicine was given her, she vomited abundantly, and voided Worms upwards and downwards, and by the Help of a Febrifuge and Althelmintick Potion she was perfectly cured.

VI. OBSERVATION.

A Man of Quality went to *Paris* to recover an Inheritance; he caught there a Gonorrhœa, for which they gave him Medicines Months together, without being able to stop the Running. He returned into the Country, where he took his Pleasures as if he had been well cured. The Gonorrhœa being stopped of itself, he became impotent; and tho' he was but 30 Years of Age, and of a strong Complexion, it was impossible for him, what Object soever he had, to surmount the Defect of Erection. He came to this Town, to consult about his Case, and five of us agreed unanimously, that he had the Pox, that the Venom was fixed in the *Musculi Erectores & Accelleratores Penis*, and that he must pass through the grand Remedy.

He went to *Montpelier*, where our Advice was confirmed, the Remedy administered, and the Defect removed. He has married since, and got Children.

VII. OBSERVATION.

A Trooper, of a good Family, a guard upon the Frontiers of *Bearn*, (but they are seldom otherwise who come from afar) was seized with

with Epileptick Convulsions and Deafness. He had been under the Care of some Physicians in his Country, and of other Persons in private, but always without Success; he was of Opinion that a Salivation would cure his Fits and Deafness.

I was at that time a young Practitioner, and pleased to find him thus inclined, and to confirm his Notion shewed him a Passage in *Willis*, on the Epilepsy in these Words. *Probabile est Salivationem à mercurio potenter excitatam hunc morbum, certissime curaturam.* (It is probable, that a powerful Salivation will cure this Distemper.) Besides he had formerly had some Infections, of which he had been cured: I made the best of this Circumstance. Moreover I offered him my Assistance gratis, and I was well persuaded, as a young Man without Experience, that I should cure him, as *Willis* makes us hope.

He went under the Course, the Salivation came on copiously and kindly, which lasted 27 or 30 Days, after which he became fresh and jolly; but the Convulsion did not go off, and he was the same as before.

I thought myself obliged to insert this Observation here, to undeceive those who might be seduced by *Willis's* Authority. This was the Case of a Physician who having this Distemper, asked me what I thought of a Salivation to cure him. I answered him, that I had learned from Experience, that *Willis* was mistaken in his Conjecture, and that we were
apt

apt to do so our selves when we were minded to follow such Notions as are not founded upon practical Facts. I shall publish, God willing, one Day, a very short and simple System to cure the Epilepsy.

THIRD ARTICLE.

Concerning some Cures performed by the Method proposed, upon divers Distempers, which did not depend upon any Venereal Infection.

TO observe some Order in relating the Observations under this Article, I thought proper to range them according to the different Parts of the Body, which they had seized, beginning with the Head, and distinguishing them by Chapters.

CHAP. I.

Of some Disorders of the Head cured by Mercury administred in Frictions, and carried off by purging.

THE Efficacy of discharging by Stool in Disorders of the Face, has been observed by *Hippocrates* and those who have followed him. *Exinanita alvus ex facie ducit. Hipp. in Epid. in faciei morbis purgantia omnem paginam adimplent. Bagl. prax. med* (Emptying by Stool draws from the Face. *Hipp. in Epid. in Disorders of the Face purging doth every Thing. Bagl. prax. med.*) This is still more confirmed by Experience, as may be seen from the following Observations.

I. OBSER-

I. OBSERVATION.

A Girl 15 or 16 Years old, only Daughter of a Merchant of this City, had from her Birth been troubled with Scabs in her Forehead, which falling off, left an Ulcer, discharging a purulent Serum; these Scabs were soon followed by new ones, which continued with a sharp itching. The Mother had try'd many Medicines to cure her but in vain; some had flattered her, that the Disorder would be cured when her Menfes began to appear, according to *Hippocrates Aphor. Plurimæ autem passionēs pueris judicantur cum ad pubertatem pervenerint, et puellis cum menstrua erumpere incæperint, quæ vero permanserint adolescere consueverunt.* (Most Disorders of Boys come to a Determination when they arrive at the Age of Puberty, and of Girls, when their Menfes begin to appear, those which remain grow up with them.) Nevertheless seeing that her Hopes were vain, and that this Complaint did not disappear upon the coming of her Menfes, she was under the utmost Concern; so much the rather as Persons of the Profession had told her, that if this Disorder was cured, the Humour which occasioned it might take another Course, and fall upon the Eyes, the Breast, or some other Part. She has told me many times, that she thought herself very unhappy, that God should have chosen to afflict her only Daughter in this Manner, rather than one of her three Sons, which he had given her.

I undertook to cure her by my System. After the preliminary Preparations I made them rub her Legs with half an Ounce of *Unguentum Neapolitanum*, by Intervals, and took care to purge her the next Day with Mannæ dissolved in an Infusion of Tea, which work'd her perfectly well.

It is not to be conceived how soon her Disorder went away, the Scabs fell off one after another, the Ulcers which used to remain after them cicatrized, and in 25 Days she was well cured, and has had no Return of it, tho' it is already 4 Years since her cure. I made her wear a long time a Girdle with Quicksilver revived from Cinnabar.

II. OBSERVATION.

A Friar of a celebrated Order had an Ulcer in his Nose, for the Cure of which he had been sent to *Perpignan*, where a Surgeon of great Reputation treated him with Remedies both internal and external, but without Effect. The Ulcer increased, the Bone of the Nose came away by Splinters, the Humour rotted the Bone of the Palate, pierced the Teguments which covered it, and made a Hole big enough to put one's little Finger in, through which the Matter of the Ulcer run into the Mouth, from whence came forth such a fetid and cadaverous Stench, that his Brother Friars stood in need of all their Charity to come near him.

The Reverend Father Provincial of his Order, whom no one surpasses in Penetration, Knowledge and Virtue, Hereditary Qualifications

tions in his Family, did me the Honour to shew this Friar to me, and to ask me if I thought this Disorder could be cured. I examined him; he had never had any kind of Venereal Disorder, he was even in that happy State of Innocence as never to have merited it; besides he was Native of a Northern Country at the Extremity of the World, where these Disorders are very rare, not to say almost unknown; wherefore I could not accuse any Venereal Infection, for the Cause of his Complaint. Nevertheless I thought nothing could cure so great a Disorder but Mercury. I proposed to the Reverend Father Provincial, to treat this Friar like a Person under the Pox; saying, that altho' Mercury was vulgarly thought only to be consecrated to Venereal Distempers, yet it was very efficacious in Diseases depending from other Causes, as in the Caries, Ulcers, both internal and external, Dropsies, Obstructions, Tetters, Itch; and that I would make use of Frictions, but purge them off by Stool, since in case the Humour was pushed towards the Part affected, it might occasion violent Disorders, as had sometimes happened to me in treating Persons for the Pox, by Salivation; and as may be seen in the precedent Observations, when the Distemper had made any Havock in the Mouth or Face: That as my Method was to carry off the Effect of the Frictions by Stool, even in the confirmed Pox, to avoid Pain and Danger, so much the rather was it proper in the present

sent Case, the Disorder being in the Face, to evacuate by Stool, according to *Hippocrates's* Rule. *Exinanita alvus ex facie ducit.* Besides, as this Friar was put under a Course he had not merited by his Fault, it was just to soften and render it to him as easy as possible; but that nothing could be done without mercurial Frictions, since all the most elaborate and curious Preparations did nothing but weaken its Virtue; and its good Effects were wholly owing to Nature only, Chymistry having no manner of Share in it.

The Reverend Father Provincial consented so much the more willingly as he had already thought himself of this Expedient. Nothing was wanting on his Part, generous Charity, just Measures for the Secret, &c. The Patient was put under the Course of Frictions, which we repeated to 12 times, leaving some interval between them; an Ounce of the Ointment was used every time, and carried off by Purges and Clusters. These Evacuations produced a surprising Effect, so that in 57 Days the Bones of the Nose exfoliated, the Hole in the Roof of the Palate cicatrized, the Stench went away, and the Patient was well cured, without any bad Accident during the whole Course.

III. OBSERVATION.

SINCE that I have had under my Care a Friar of the same Order, who had an Exostosis on the Os *Jugale*, with a fistulous
M Sinus

Sinus piercing into the upper Jaw Bone, and discharging Matter which run into the Mouth. I made use of the same Method, with the like Success: With this Difference, that I desired he might not go out of the Convent for his Cure, it being useless to make a Secret of a Disorder which was not come through his Fault. Moreover I begged the other Friars might visit him, being very sorry I had not done so too in regard to the other.

IV. OBSERVATION.

A Girl 10 Years of Age had an Inflammation on her Left Eye, which Bleeding, Collyriums, Purges, Waters, Powders, &c. could not mitigate at all. The Inflammation spread to the Eyelid, where Scabs were formed both outwardly and inwardly, reaching up to the Eyebrow. She could not possibly open the Eye, abundance of Pus came from these Scabs, the Eye-ball was inflamed, over which a white Skin was grown, and she could not see at all with it. Almost every Medicine had been try'd, either in the Convent, which the Disorder obliged her to leave, or at her Father's House.

I was called in the Month of *May* 1729, and found the Eye disordered as before mentioned. After a slight Preparation, I had the Bend of her Hams and Legs rubbed; the Day afterwards I made her take an Ounce and half of Manna in Tea. This Method I pursued 25 or 30 Days, and had the Pleasure of seeing every Day some Scabs drop off, which covered

vered the Eyelids and Eye-brow, the Redness of the Eye disappeared, the white Skin went away, and the Sight returned, there only remained a Deformity, the Eye after the Cure being less than the other; and tho' the Eyelids were sound and clear, yet she could not open this Eye so wide as the other.

This Inconvenience proceeded from the Inaction under which the Eye laboured during its Disorder; the Inflammation confined the Circulation, and by this Means the Eye was deprived of its Nourishment, even the Liquors could not circulate for want of Motion which the Pain would not allow.

To remedy this I thought it necessary to make this Eye work, and make the other rest, to bring them upon an Equality; for which End I made them tie up the good Eye certain Hours in the Day, to put her under a Necessity of making use of that which had been disordered to improve it; which succeeded.

V. OBSERVATION.

I Have seen two Merchants Children of this City, of near the same Age, about 10 or 12 Years old, whose Eyes were in a terrible Disorder, which Issues could not cure, perfectly reestablished by this Method; and I am persuaded, that any Defluxion, white Skin and Rheum of the Eyes may be cured by it. *Lippientem alvi profluvio corripi bonum.* But besides the Advantage you reap from the Revulsion, and which *Hippocrates* has pointed out

in his Epidemics, you have also that of destroying by the Mercury the Worms which swarm in the Water running from the Eyes, as is observed by Dr. Andry.

VI. OBSERVATION.

A Young Gentlewoman had some Disorder in her Head in a Convent where she was for Education; one of the Nuns undertook to cure her, and succeeded by Vertue of a Pomatum she applied upon it. Soon after the Disorder of the Head had disappeared her Nose began to swell, and was painful, which Swelling terminated in an Ulcer in the Partition of the Nose, from whence came an insupportable Stench. She was so beautiful, and had so many other Charms, that she had an Offer of Marriage, notwithstanding this Defect, which is a very great one in a Person of her Sex. *Mulieres bene olent quæ nihil olent. Duret.* "Women smell well that smell of nothing." Her Lover ask'd me if there was no Possibility of removing this bad Smell; I answered Yes, and to this End after convenient Preparations I put her under this Method, and with the same Success. I made them anoint the Ulcer every Day with *Unguentum Neapolitanum*.

REMARK I.

THE Success which I had in curing the first Friar, assured me of the like in this young Lady; if a Caries of the Bones of the Nose

Nose and Palate had given way to this Method, what might I not expect of an Ulcer which had not yet rotted the Bones?

R E M A R K II.

THE imprudent Cure of the Scabs which this Patient had on her Head, was doubtless the Cause of this Ulcer of her Nose. It is not adviseable to suppress a Running of what kind soever, not even of Issues without great Precaution, and without premising general Remedies even sometimes repeated.

R E M A R K III.

HIPPOCRATES observes in his Epidemics, that we ought to have particular regard to Disorders succeeding each other. *Morborum autem successiones diligenter attendere oportet:* and Ballonius after him in his Consultations, No. 13. says, *Hippocrates morborum Successiones attendendas esse præscribebat, eo quod in morbis longis multa Symptomata contingunt quæ bonis et eruditis Medicis imponunt, ob similitudinem et fallaciam, et novi morbi tanquam soboles rediviva, ex aliis subinde consequantur ac pullulent.* "Hippocrates enjoin'd us to observe the
" Successions of Distempers, because in long
" Disorders many Symptoms happen which
" impose upon good and experienced Physicians
" by their Likeness and Appearance of a new
" Disease arriving from other Causes." *Bag-*

livi has a whole Chapter *de morborum successionibus*, which deserves being read. I could give many Proofs of what these grave Authors have said on this Head, but shall insert here only one Example, altho' foreign to the Subject I treat on.

A Friar of the Order of St. *Francis*, was seized with a great Difficulty of Breathing, with an obstinate Cough, a slow Fever, and Pain in his Breast. Many Remedies were made use of in vain, as Bleeding, Purgings, Syrups, Ptilans, &c. with this Disorder he was grown very weak and lean. One Day, when I visited him as usual, he spoke in Conversation of some Tetters he had had on his Thighs, but which had disappeared whilst he was abroad upon begging of Wine in the *Montferran*, at the time of Vintage. I ask'd him, if since they had vanished he had not been out of order, and he agreed that from that time he had begun to cough, and to lose his Appetite; that afterwards the Difficulty of Breathing had increased gradually, and that the slow Fever had followed. I took my Indication from the Suppression of these Tetters, and judg'd that the Humour was fallen upon the Breast. I presently ordered them to apply blistering Plaisters which were made sharper by mixing Powder of *Cantharides* with them, and after their Operation, the Patient respired freely, and was cured in 24 Hours, excepting the Weakness and Leanness, which were restored by good Food, and a Basin of Milk every Morning. I also ordered the

the Plaisters to be laid on the Places where the Tetters had been, to follow the Advice of *Duret. in coac. Hip. fol. 54. in omni progressu et transitu facilis fit ad eas partes reversio, unde morbifica vis manavit, siquidem in illis partibus impressa manent veteris mali vestigia.* " In all
 " Progression and Transition the morbid Mat-
 " ter easily returns to those Parts from whence
 " it flowed, because the old Distemper leaves
 " there an Impression of its Footsteps." I also kept these Tetters open with great Care. This same Friar relapsed three Years after into the same Complaints by the drying up of the Tetters, and was cured in the same Manner.

VII. OBSERVATION.

A Boy, 12 Years old, had a scall'd Head, I put him under a Course of Frictions in his lower Parts, and purged him after due Preparation. This Method succeeded, and the Scabs of the Head fell off gradually: Afterwards, I had his Head rubb'd with Tincture of Myrrh, to strengthen the Cicatrices. I make use of this Practice to cure scall'd Heads with Success.

However, I must own ingenuously, that tho' the Scabs disappeared, they have returned sometimes 8 or 10 Months after, especially in those whose Heads were quite covered with them.

But as there is no doubt that Mercury is the true Remedy for a scall'd Head, since it makes it disappear, I thought that to make its Effect

solid and lasting, it was necessary to continue it a long time ; accordingly I determined to increase the Number of Frictions, and the Dose of the Ointment, which I order to be rubb'd in at the Extremities, as if it were a confirm'd Pox, and thus I have succeeded hitherto.

I have observed that this Disorder is very common, and like endemical among the People inhabiting our Sea-Coasts; and that those whose chief Employment is Fishing are very much subject to it; which I attribute to the salt Air they respire, the frequent Fogs, and the Badness of their Water; perhaps, the Shell-Fish, which is the chief of their Sustenance, may also contribute something towards it.

VIII. OBSERVATION.

A Middle aged Man was troubled with a Difficulty of Hearing every Morning 'till about 10 o' Clock; People were obliged to speak very loud to make him hear. But after 10 o' Clock 'till towards Night, his Hearing was somewhat better. Besides, he had a humming in his Ears, which threatned him with Deafness. I orderd him to be blooded in the Foot, to be purged and bathed; then we applied 8 Frictions on his lower Parts of half an Ounce of Ointment each, purging him as many times between, by which means the Difficulty of Hearing was removed, the Humming ceased, and he is perfectly well.

CAHP.

CHAP. II.

Of the Disorders seizing the Neck and Breast.

I. OBSERVATION.

A Gardiner's Son, 7 Years old, had some scrophulous Glands in his Neck, and under his Chin, hard, swell'd, and ulcerated in many Places. I ordered them to rub his Neck and Ulcers with the *Unguentum Neapolitanum*, purging him often by Intervals. Internally, I made him take every Day, Morning and Night, except the Days he purged, a Dose of prepared Mars with Millepedes, and kept the Glands and Ulcers covered with a Plaister of the *Diabotanium*. The Ulcers healed, the Tumours disappeared, and the Patient is perfectly well cured, and has had no Relapse. This is my Method of treating the King's Evil.

The prepared Mars which I make use of, and which I shall often mention hereafter, is a very simple Preparation which my Father kept among his Nostrums. It is as follows.

Take some Iron file Dust, and not of Steel, make it red hot in a Crucible, fling it red hot into an earthen Pipkin full of Wine, afterwards reduce it into an impalpable Powder. This is one of the greatest Remedies for chronical Distempers.

II. OBSERVATION.

THE Daughter of a *Dutchman* aged about 11 or 12 Years, had been troubled a long time with scrophulous Tumours in her Neck and left Arm, between the Elbow and Wrist, and on her Feet. Those about her Neck were already suppurated, and partly cicatrised; those of the Arm had left Holes which run continually, and there was even some Appearance of the *Cubitus* being carious. After she had been Blooded, Purged, used the Bath, and drank Whey, I put her under a Course of Frictions, made chiefly on the Parts affected, and took Care to throw off the Mercury by Stool, for fear it should raise a Salivation, being rubbed in at the Ulcers, and applied the *Emplastrum Diabotanium* upon the Tumours. I kept her a long time to this Regimen, as also to the taking prepared Mars and Millepedes, and a Decoction of Turnips with Cresses and Chervil. By this Means the Tumours disappeared, the Ulcers cicatrised, and the Patient was perfectly cured, so that there never has been since any Appearance of its breaking out again. Her Menses are come on, and she has been always very well. This is now 10 Years since.

III. OBSERVATION.

A Boy, 10 Years old, had a Swelling on his right Breast, which broke; the opening was very small, it was healed, and they thought
the

the Child well cured. Nevertheless, it broke again by a new Abscess which remained fistulous, and there was room to suppose that the Rib was carious. His Mother had dressed him two Years every Day, when his Father, who was then Coachman to a President à Mortier of this Parliament, fell dangerously ill, and upon his Recovery desired me to look upon his Child. I made them rub in some of the mercurial Ointment every Night, and gave him some Mars and Millepedes, purging him sometimes. He was cured, and his Cicatrice has never shewed any tendency to open again, altho' it is more than 5 Years since I attended him.

IV. OBSERVATION.

A Merchant's Wife of this City, young and handsome, had a Swelling on her Breast of a monstrous size. This Tumour was accompanied with violent Pains, it ulcerated and voided purulent Matter stinking terribly: From the Ulcer sprung up an Excrecence like a Mushroom the Bigness of a Walnut, the Pain was continual but most violent at Night, (which is common in all Sorts of Pain, as has been observed above). The Fear of dying fatigued her still more, for they had christened her Complaint with the name of Cancer, and she lost all Hopes, so much the more since she had made use of all the Oils, Plaisters, Balsams, Herbs, &c. she had been advised to, without any Success, but rather to the contrary.

As soon as I was called I began with taking from her the Child she suckled with the other Breast; I ordered her to be blooded in the Foot of the Side affected, I purged her, I made her bathe some Days, drinking in the Bath a Bason of Goat-milk-whey; and after 10 Days Preparation, I commenced the Frictions with the mercurial Ointment, on the distempered part itself, on the axillary Glands, the Arm, and Shoulder of the same Side. The Breast was covered with a great Plaister of Diabotanium, and she was purged with mercurial Pills every third Day. The Days between I made her take a Powder composed of Mars præp. half a Dram, Millepedes one Scruple, drinking after it a Decoction of Turnips, with Water Cresses and Chervil. The Tumour went away, the Ulcer cicatrised, and the Excrescence disappeared entirely; in a Word, the Patient was very well cured; with this Circumstance only, that the Breast which had been disordered is somewhat less than the other.

This Success made me conceive Hopes of curing by the same Method Cancers in the Breasts of Women: But tho' I tried it several Times I did not succeed. To this purpose I shall relate the three following Observations, which have convinced me that in true Cancers it is prudent to follow *Hippocrates's* Advice. *Cancros omnes occultos melius est non curare, curati enim citius pereunt, non curati vero longius vitam trahunt.* ' It is better not to cure occult Cancers, for Persons that are cured of them
' die

the VENEREAL DISEASE. 173
' die sooner ; if they are not cured they live
' longer.'

V. OBSERVATION.

A Tanner's Wife, aged 45 Years, at the Time when her Menfes begun to leave her, and she had them no more regularly, they coming only once in two or three Months, had a Pain in her left Breast with a Swelling, which increased to a prodigious Size, so that she was obliged to support the Breast with a Sling, it broke, and made an Ulcer, the Bigness of a Crown-piece.

I treated her after the same Method, the Ulcer was cicatrised, and the Swelling diminished by one half. The Patient grew tired, after two Months ; I told her that since the Mercury had been able to cure the Ulcer, remove the Pain, and reduce considerably the Swelling, the Continuation of these Remedies might compleat the Cure. But there was no Possibility of persuading her to it, and six Months after I learned that the Tumour was broke again, that she was seized with a slow Fever, and died under the Hands of a Quack.

The Reason why the young Woman in the foregoing Observation was cured, and that the same Method did not succeed in others, is because her Swelling had been occasioned by her Pregnancy and Milk ; the Disorders which happen to the Breast on this account, are very different from carcinomatous Complaints, both
in

in their manner of Invasion, and also in the nature of the Infection which produces them.

VI. OBSERVATION.

A Citizen's Wife of this Town, had at the Age of 53 a Swelling in her Breast, which begun precisely at the Time when her Menfes ceased. This Tumour gave her violent Pain, it broke, and distilled a corrosive Matter which burnt the Linen put upon it, like *Aqua-fortis*, or Spirit of *Nitre*. I sent her to the Waters of *Bareges*, which did her some good, the Pains and Swelling decreased: But shortly after her return the Swelling increased the rather as it was towards the Winter Season. I proposed her to undergo the Operation the Spring following, and to make sure of its Effect, I thought it proper to open an Issue in each Arm, that the Blood might be cleared by these artificial Drains of its corrosive Humour, which would be locked up after the Operation by the Cicatrice. The Issues were opened, and run, when a famous Surgeon of this City performed the Operation, which succeeded perfectly well.

After the Place was cicatrised, the Issues in some manner redoubled their Evacuation, and discharged so abundantly that the Maid who looked after them tired of her daily Task importuned the Patient to let them heal. ' It is now two Years, said she, since you have ' been well cured, you sleep, eat, and are bet-
' ter

‘ter than I; you have a healthy Complexion,
‘why should you endure any longer two
‘Evils which are disagreeable to your Husband,
‘and on account of their ill Smell hinder you
‘from frequenting your old Acquaintance, and
‘upon these Reasons she yielded.’

A short Time after the healing of the Issues she perceived a little Swelling near the Cicatrice, which increased visibly, and reached to the axillary Glands. She concealed her Complaint as long as possible, for fear the Issues should be opened again, or of a new Operation. The Tumour ulcerates, she calls for help, they think it not proper to perform the Operation again: The Issues are opened, they suppurate but faintly, the cancerous Ulcer draining away the matter of Suppuration, a slow Fever consumes her, the Ointment was applied, but to no purpose, and the Patient died.

I never saw a Person who desired so much to live, or who was so much afraid of Death as this Woman, altho’ she was unhappy in her Family, both on account of her Husband who despised her, and of a disobedient Child. She prayed me after she had received the Sacraments, to perform the Operation myself, that nobody should know any thing of it, and that she hoped the second Operation would succeed like the first. I excused myself, and as she was not sensible of the Reason of my Incapacity of handling those Instruments, nor of my want of Experience, I had recourse to my
Com-

Compassion for her Condition; that I was so incapable of giving her any Pain, that the Instrument would drop from my Hand.

Altho' she was of a foreign Nation which passes for courageous, and is so in reality, which even has the Reputation of despising Life, I learn'd from her Example that the *English* fear Death as well as other Nations.

VII. OBSERVATION.

A Nun who had red Hair, was subject to a periodical Vomiting, which no Remedy could ever remove. This Evacuation ceasing of itself, her left Breast grew hard and swelled to a prodigious size. The violent Pains which tortured her Night and Day, had made her very lean and weak. I was called, and after proper Preparation I made Frictions upon the part, and to open another Sluice to the Matter which occasioned the Vomiting, I made her take aperitive Medicines to evacuate by Urine. At first the Tumour lessened, and she was better of her Pain, nevertheless it afterwards opened, and the Patient died.

I have read and observed in my Practice, that the Distempers of Persons who have red Hair are more difficult to cure, and more dangerous in their Event; which probably depends from the particular Characteristick of the Humour that occasions red Hair.

VIII. OBSERVATION.

A Girl, native of this Town, aged about 12 or 13 Years, had a Tumour upon the Clavicula, the Bigness of a little Egg, and some Swellings under her Arm-pit. Her Father and Mother who loved her greatly, neglected nothing to have her cured: They put her into the Hands of a famous Surgeon, who thought proper to make her pass through the Frictions by Extinction, which were repeated from time to time without any Success. The Parents were vastly afflicted, imagining they had imployed the last Remedy. The Mother prayed me one Day as I was passing by her House to come in, and shew'd me her Daughter's Swellings; and I thought the Mercury had not succeeded, because it had not been assisted by Steel and Millepedes taken internally,

I cured her by mercurial Frictions, which were made every Day upon the Swelling, and the whole Place was covered with the *Emplastrum Diabotanium*. Every Morning and Night she took a Powder composed of one Scruple of Mars, and fifteen Grains of Millepedes, drinking a draught of Whey after it, turned with Cresses and Chervil. The Tumours diminished insensibly, and after a considerable time vanished entirely. The young Damsel grew tall in a little time, and was very well; it is now three Years since she was cured.

N

There

There is hardly any external Tumour, that can withstand this Method. Mercury, Mars, and Millepedes, are three Herculean Medicines, and the Plaister of *Diabotanium* of *Blondel* is no less powerful, and one may say of this Method what *Riverius* says of his Febrifuge. *Constat triplici Hercule, quibus additur quartus athleta cæterorum complementum efficiens.* “ It consists of a triple Hercules, to which is “ added a fourth Champion making up the “ Complement of the rest.

This Method is not only successful in almost every external Tumour, but also in those infesting the Viscera, and in a Consumption, as will appear hereafter.

C H A P. III.

Concerning the Breast.

I. OBSERVATION.

A Bargeman's Widow, aged 55 Years, had been afflicted with a Cough a long time, which exceeded the Bounds of an ordinary Cold: Besides the Cough she spit Blood, grew lean, had a slow Fever, Pain in one side, and spit true Matter. This purulent Spitting was very abundant, especially in the Morning, and after she had reposed some Hours she felt, she said, that the purulent Spitting came from the Place in her Side where she had her Pain. In a Word this Person was Phthical, with an Ulcer in her Lungs, Night-sweats, great Lean-
ness,

ness, and Weakness, and got up with Difficulty only one Hour a Day to have her Bed made.

One of my Brethren had been consulted for her; he had judg'd this Disease a true Phthisis, and very justly. He had ordered her an Electuary with the Bark to stop the Fever, some Sweetners of the Blood, as Coral, *Os Sepiæ*, Crabs Eyes, a Pectoral Apozem, a Decoction of Turnips, the Milk, and other Things made use of in this Distemper. Every thing was done, but all was in vain.

I was called to a Surgeon of my Acquaintance, distinguished for his Learning and great Application in his Profession, to a Town where this Patient resided. There I saw her, and found her in the Condition just now mentioned.

I must say here, that many Years since I have not been pleased either with the Notion Mankind have concerning Consumptions, or the Remedies commonly made use of to cure them: I thought proper to reserve for a particular Dissertation at the End of this Work the Method of using Mercury in this Distemper; and not to interrupt the Thread of my Narration I refer the Reader to the Dissertation inserted at the End of this Work.

II. OBSERVATION.

A Curate of this Diocese had a Wen of a considerable Bigness on his Bastard Ribs, it was moveable, and a skilful Surgeon advised

him to have it cut off. But he was afraid, and came to ask me if there was no Means of dissolving it ; I told him we could but try, and that the Remedies which I would employ could do him no harm, but on the contrary the Operation would be the easier, if they were obliged to come to that at last.

I made use of Frictions upon the Wen, the *Emplastrum Diabotanium* over it, and internally some Mars and the Millepedes. The Wen is almost gone ; it is true, he has continued these Remedies a long time, there being no need of my exhorting him to it ; for seeing it diminish daily, he was very willing to continue them to the End.

C H A P. IV.

Concerning the Liver.

THERE is no Remedy which takes Effect so quickly, safely, and constantly, as the Application of Mercury by Friction in the capital Obstructions of the Liver. I shall relate some Examples of it, to prove its Efficacy, and pass by in Silence many others, not to swell this Volume by Repetitions.

The Reason why Mercury succeeds so well, and more expeditiously in Obstructions of the Liver, than in other particular Tumours, appears to me to be this.

Besides the Blood of the *Vena Portæ* which spreads itself through the Liver, a very considerable

derable Branch of the *Arteria Cæliaca* is also inserted there. Thus the Mercury is conveyed thither in a great Torrent, when it is mixt with the Blood; which is not the Case in the external Tumours, which are supplied by small Branches of Arteries. The Liver therefore may be eased with such Dispatch as has always surpris'd me agreeably, whereas a great deal more time is required to remove an external Tumour.

I. OBSERVATION.

A Woman of *la Teste* had laboured many Years under an Obstruction of the Liver, which had reduced her to extream Leanness. She had a slow Fever, the Jaundice all over, her Liver was hard, approaching to a Schirrous, she had lain for many Years on her right Side only, the Weight of this Bowel weighing upon the others when she lay on her left Side, and she had been confined to her Bed almost two Years.

I ordered the Frictions with the *Unguentum Neapolitanum* upon the Region of the Liver, and applied a great Plaister of *Diabotanium*, which covered the whole Tumour, after the Friction was administred. She kept it Night and Day on the Place, except the time of Friction only. Internally I made her take Mornings and Evenings half a Dram of prepared Mars, with 15 Grains of Millepedes, drinking after every Dose a Bason of Ptisan,

made with Nettle-roots, which she drank warm like Broth.

By the Use of these Medicines, which she continued many Days, she was perfectly cured, her Liver came again to its natural Suppleness and Size; she has a good and lively Colour, and finds herself very well since. It is now 5 Years since she was cured.

This same Method I found always answer in the capital Obstructions of the Liver, and the Ointment applied upon the Region of the Liver never produced a Salivation. The Reason is that the Ointment being put in small Quantity, and not spread on a large Surface, but confined to the Region of the Liver, it cannot bring on a Salivation. Nevertheless, I am very careful of it, and if the Mouth was hot, or Respiration difficult, I should take heed to carry off the Evacuation by Stool.

II. OBSERVATION.

A Young Man of this Town had been afflicted with the Jaundice a long time, for which he had taken abundance of Medicines, to that degree that he was quite tired of them. His Liver was hard, and very much swell'd, as happens always in that Disorder.

To cure him I made use of the Ointment in Frictions, and applied the *Emplastrum Diabotanicum* upon the Liver: Internally, I gave prepared Mars and Millepedes with a Decoction of Nettles, which *Riverius* recommends in his Chapter of the Jaundice. He was cured perfectly well in a few Days.

III.

III. OBSERVATION.

A Young Woman, Servant at an Eating-house, had a pale Complexion, slow Fever, Nauseating, Retching to vomit in the Morning, Weariness in her Legs, Pain in her Hams when she walk'd, and a Difficulty of Breathing. Under this Disorder, which was accompanied with a great Diminution of her Menfes she had laboured 4 Years, and spent all her Wages in Medicines to no purpose.

I ordered her to be blooded in the Foot, and to take a Vomit. And as I found a great Hardness in her Liver, I made her rub some of the mercurial Ointment upon it every Night; applying the *Emplastrum Diabotanium* over it. Internally, she took Troches of Mars, composed after the following manner, to favour the Aversion she had for all kind of Medicines.

Take of prepared Mars 2 Ounces, Powder of Cinnamon 2 Ounces, double refined Sugar half a Pound; pound and mix all together, and with mucilage of *Gum Tragacanth* made with Orange-Flower-Water, make Troches of two Drams each, which dry in a shady Place. She was very well cured by the Use of these Remedies.

When Mars is dressed up in this manner, it is as agreeable to take as any Sweet-meat.

IV. OBSERVATION.

A Famous Workman of this Town distinguished in his Profession, had in 1729 a continual Fever which fatigued him a long time. His Surgeon bled and purged him, and made him take the Bark a great while in large Doses. He was very much surprised to find the Fever held on notwithstanding the Febrifuge was continued 37 Days: he perceived the Patient's Legs swell'd, and sent him into the Country, assuring him all would do well; but the Swelling increased, and the Fever continued, and he came back with a kind of Dropsy, which Authors call *Anasarca* or *Leucophlegmatia*, his Thighs, Hands, Face, and especially his Loins very much swelled.

As soon as I was called, I told him, that among all those Symptoms which presented themselves to view, and which he had related to me, he had left unmentioned one which was the Cause of his Distemper; that I was persuaded he had an Obstruction and considerable Hardness in his Liver, to which his Fever and Swelling, which increased daily, were owing. Besides this he had a violent Cough, which came frequently and fatigued him in the Night.

I made him lie on the Bed, and upon examining his right *Hypochondrium*, I discovered the Hardness and Obstruction in his Liver, as I had judged beforehand, and as commonly is found

found in Dropsies: this Hardness was painful when pressed upon.

The very same Day that I was called I ordered Frictions upon the Liver, and to apply the *Emplastrum Diabotanium*. I purged him 3 Days running, having in like manner rub'd him 3 Days successively. The Purges were composed of Rhubarb, *Mercurius Dulcis*, and Scammony, made into a Bolus with *Syrupus è Spina*, which produced large Evacuations by Stool, his Legs diminished considerably, but what gave me the most Pleasure was, that the Hardness of the Liver disappeared, and the Fever ceased. Afterwards his Urine began to flow abundantly, and I thought it proper to follow the Steps of Nature, *Quo natura vergit eo ducere oportet*. "You should follow that way which Nature is inclined to." I therefore made him take the *Pastilli Martiales*, with some Whey after them, mixing with it a little Glass of the Juice of Water-creffes. The Urine went on very well, the Swelling and Cough ceased in Proportion, and at the End of 35 Days he was perfectly cured, and went to his Work again.

I have a very great Opinion of the Evacuation procured by Urine, and prefer it to that which we are obliged to make by Purg-
ing, or Vomiting, when the urinary Discharges fail. This last doth not weaken the Patient, and it pushes through the same Canal which Nature designed for a Discharge of the superfluous Serosities of the Body.

The

The Cough which fatigued the Patient seemed somewhat suspicious, so much the rather as it exceeded the Bounds of a common Defluxion, and as all his Family had died of a Consumption, *viz.* his Mother, three of his Sisters, and one Brother. It is well known how much those kind of hereditary Dispositions are to be feared, and what Attention the Physician ought to give to them: But for the Reasons I shall set forth in my Dissertation on Consumptions, I thought I might remove the Cough with the same Medicines with which I dispersed the Tumour of the Liver, and the slow Fever, and by which I evacuated the Water by Urine, which succeeded according to my Wishes.

V. OBSERVATION.

A Dropical Person of *Chartrons* had a hardness in his Liver, his Legs, Thighs, Cods, and lower Belly were swell'd.

I eased him by evacuating Medicines, as previous to take off the Load, according to *Sydenham's* Method, in his Treatise of the Dropsy, by means of Emeticks given every Day: *Utpote qui singulis diebus, &c.* Afterwards I made use of Mercury in Frictions, with the Plaister, Mars, aperitive Ptisan, &c.

VI. OBSERVATION.

A Woman of the Ward of *St. Michael* had an obstinate Vomiting, which made her bring up all her Aliments, as soon as she had

had taken them. Having examined her, I found she had a considerable Hardness in the little Lobe of the Liver, which covers the Stomach. What I had learnt from a foregoing Observation informed me, that this Tumour pressed upon the Stomach, and occasioned the Vomiting, for the Reasons there mentioned. I made use only of Frictions with the mercurial Ointment upon the Tumour, and the *Emplastr. Vigon. cum merc.* over it; without having occasion for any other Remedies, the Patient was cured, the Vomiting ceasing immediately after the Tumour was dispersed.

The same Method I found successful in a like Disorder in a Woman of *Chartrons*.

CHAP. V.

Of the Parts below the lower Belly.

I. OBSERVATION.

A Young Man of 30, or thereabouts, was seized with a Pain in his right Testicle, without any external Cause, for neither Fall nor Blow were in the Case. This Pain was soon followed by a Tumour, which increased daily, notwithstanding he was blooded several times, applying the *Emplastrum Diabotanium*, discutient Fomentations, &c. I call'd in Consultation the late Mr. *Manade*, Master of the Surgeon's Company of the City of *Bordeaux*, who proposed new discutient Fomentations, Plaisters,

Plaisters, Purging between whiles, & Bandage to support the Part, &c. all this was done but without Effect. The Testicle increased vastly, so that the Pain and Weight of it obliged the Patient to keep his Bed. During the Use of these Medicines the left Testicle began also to swell, but a great deal faster than the other, so that the Patient was extremely uneasy with the Pain, and afraid of an unhappy Event.

In the Consultation with Mr. *Manadé*, we agreed, (1.) That it was no Rupture, since in the Groin from the *Ligamentum Annulare* downwards there was no Swelling, and the Swelling affected the Substance of the Testicles only, whereas in Ruptures the Bag swells, and not the Testicle. (2.) We had no sufficient Proofs that the Patient had the Pox, and that these Tumours were a Produce thereof: The Patient owned indeed, that formerly he had contracted a Gonorrhœa at *Cadiz*, but had been well cured by a *French* Surgeon of great Reputation in that Place. It was 8 Years since that Adventure, and he had never had any the least Symptom of the Pox since that time; he had been married 4 Years, his Children were clean and sound, and his Wife was in good Health.

I had some Thoughts of sending him to *Bareges*, to try if those Waters would not dissolve these Swellings, but the Season was not convenient; besides the Patient was charg'd with Affairs of great Importance by a foreign Court, which would not permit him to leave
this

this Town. In short, I was not absolutely persuaded of the Efficacy of those Waters, having seen a Person of Quality at a Consultation, who for the like kind of Tumours tried without Success the Waters of *Bareges*, and at his return was obliged to undergo a compleat Castration, altho' at two different times.

I resolved to put my Patient under a Course of Frictions purged off by Stool; to this I was determined the more boldly, since I had been an Eye Witness of the Success of the Frictions in dissolving Tumours either in the Testicles, or the Yard, as has been mentioned in the foregoing Observations.

This Project was executed after convenient Preparations. The first Friction procured him some Ease, the second diminished the Pain considerably, the third silenced it entirely, and we perceived with Pleasure that the Swelling abated gradually until the Parts were reduced to their natural State. The Frictions were continued till the Cure was compleated, with Precaution to purge him at Intervals; but we were obliged to go to 24 of one Ounce of *Unguentum* each. There remained no Sign of any Swelling or Hardness, either in the Substance of the Testicle, or of the Epididymis.

This is the Patient who voided the Tape-Worm during the Course of Frictions mentioned above.

I shall relate here some Remarks upon this Observation. (1.) During the Frictions the Patient

Patient often went abroad the very Day he received them in the Evening, 'till which time he attended his Business: He took this Liberty himself, and the great Heat which was in the Summer of 1726 was the Reason, thank God, that no Accident happened to him. (2.) He constantly appeared at Table, having always several Visitors: He eat with a good Appetite, which returned as soon as the Pain had ceased, and that he had recovered his Tranquillity of Mind. In the Afternoon he play'd at Piquet or Quadrille to the Satisfaction of the Company; he observed indeed a due Regimen, and no one ever knew any thing of the Nature of his Disorder, or of the Course he was under, except his Surgeon, his Valet de Chambre, who rubb'd him, his Wife, and myself. His Surgeon in ordinary had already laid his Plan for the Castration, and calculated how much he should get by it. He told me many times the Operation was unavoidable, that the Hardness of the Parts left no room to hope it would disperse, and that after all it would be only so much time and Ointment lost.

I answered, that tho' we should come to that at last, it was no matter of Indifference to the Success of the Operation to have purged the Patient's Blood, and destroyed a Principle which might have been able to raise new Trouble in some other Part; that through this Depuration the Blood would become more Balsamick and Sweet, and that the Operation
would

would succeed the better; and that besides the Business was to preserve entire a Person of Quality, a Stranger from the remotest Part of the World, and to establish in his Mind the favourable Idea those People have of the Skill of the *French* Physicians and Surgeons.

It is not to be expressed how the Surgeon was surpris'd, who is a very experienced Man, and has served a long time in the Hospitals of the King's Armies, when he saw that I dared to employ 24 Ounces of mercurial Ointment, and that this Remedy produced an Effect both successful and surprizing in curing a Distemper which he regarded as incurable.

This Patient is since become fresh, jolly, and vigorous, he has got his Wife with Child, and has never been in better Health.

I shall not boast like *Galen*, after he had cured the Wife of a *Roman*, for which he received four hundred Pieces of Gold; for besides that my Pay came late, which I always have observed to be a bad Sign, it was very small, in regard to my Trouble, Care, and the good Success.

I am nevertheless beholden to him forgiving me leave to mention him to a Patient of Distinction, who was nearly in the same Situation. He even offered to attest the Cure with his own Mouth, with all the Circumstances, either to this Patient, or any Person that should come from him.

The

The Last OBSERVATION.

Of Ulcers in the Legs.

A Cooper of this Town, aged about 32 Years, had for some Years an Ulcer in his right Leg, upon the lower Part of the *Tibia*, to cure which he had imployed many Plaisters and Balsams which had availed nothing. He wanted to be married, but the Running and ill Smell of the Ulcer were a hindrance to it. He had nothing to reproach himself with on account of Affairs of Gallantry, neither could any Fault be found with his Parents, who never had any scrophulous Complaints nor Ulcers like this; besides his Brothers and Sisters were in good Health.

Notwithstanding all the Remedies he had been told of, and which he had followed very punctually, the Ulcer made new Progress, and became as big as the Palm of one's Hand. Somewhat lower there was another the Bigness of a Crown-Piece, and a third the side of it, the Bigness of a *Louis d' Or*.

I advised him to drink the Waters at *Bareges*, having seen very good Effects from these Waters, even in scrophulous Ulcers. He went thither with great Confidence, but returned from thence as bad as he was before.

A Surgeon saw him at his return, and declared the *Os Tibia* was hurt, and carious, and that the shortest way would be to go to the Hospital of *St. Andre*, to have his Leg cut off.
He

He shed a torrent of Tears, both on account of the Loss of one of his Limbs, of great Importance to a handicraft Man, who is obliged to get his Living, and also of the Shame which he imagined it was to go to an Hospital.

It is not to be expressed how much our Poor are generally offended in their Vanity, when one speaks to them of the Hospital, altho' there is perhaps none in the Kingdom where the Patients are taken more care of, with regard both to the temporal and spiritual Welfare, than in that of St. *André*, of the City of *Bordeaux*.

I put him under my Method, which succeeded perfectly well: Eight Frictions of one Ounce each, and carried off by purging, compleatly cicatrised the Ulcers, without the least appearance of any Salivation.

End of the Treatise of the Venereal Disease.

DISSERTATION

ON THE

HYDROPHOBIA,

O R,

MADNESS from the Bite of Mad Animals, with a Method to prevent it, and to cure it.

By *PETER DESAULT*, M.D.

Member of the College of Physicians of *Bordeaux*.

APPROBATION of the
ROYAL-CENSOR.

I Have examined by order of the Lord Keeper of the Seals this Dissertation on the Hydrophobia, wherein I found nothing but what is deserving of my Approbation. *Done at Paris the 5th Day of February, 1732.*
ANDRY, M. D. and President of the Faculty of Physic of Paris.



DISSERTATION

ON THE

HYDROPHOBIA.



THE *Hydrophobia* is a terrible Disease *, no Man how intrepid soever, but shudders at the Thoughts of it: And it is the more dreadful as no Person ever has been cured who was seized with it †.

We have seen sad Examples of it in 1730, and 1731, when mad Wolves, wild Boars, Dogs and Cats, dispersed about the Neighbourhood of the City of *Bourdeaux*, especially about *Meudoc*, assaulted and bit in a cruel Manner, Men, Oxen, Cows, Horses, Mules, Asses and Sheep. Bathing in the Sea, consecrated in a manner by the unanimous Consent of all Nations, and sup-

O 3

ported

* *Miserrimum morbi genus.* CELSUS.

† *Ex iis qui hoc vitium sensissent, neminem unquam servatum vidi.* DIOSCORIDES.

ported by publick Confidence as a Preservative, has been found fruitless, and many unhappy Persons, who the Day after they had been bit went to dip in the Sea, which the Nearness of the Place made easy to them, have experienced the Usefulness of it, and died mad before the fortieth Day.

It would not be prudent to confide in a Remedy which fails often, not to say always: We ought to look for others, and have recourse to those which Physick furnishes us with *.

Nature is so rich and abundant, that we should wrong her Author, if we doubted a moment the finding some of them †.

It is not Remedies that are wanting to Physic, but Physic is wanting to Remedies. If you find but just Indications, an Apothecary's Apprentice will after that easily produce you proper Medicines ||.

To

* *Multi se in mare immergere, nec tamen inde adversus rabiem quidquam adjumenti sensere, quare non est illi remedio fidendum, ad ea potius currendum quæ libris medicorum prodita experientia certa et multiplici comprobata sunt.* PARCUS lib. 20. cap. 14.

† *Nullus tamen dubito quin in exudanti illa plenitudine qua turget natura diffluitque, ita jubente Optimo Maximo omnium rerum Conditore; in singulorum preservationem prospectum pariter sit, de curatione malorum magis insignium, quæ omnes vexant.* SYDENHAM in Præfatione.

|| *Et qui rem attente perpenderit satis liqueat præcipuum Medicinæ defectum non in eo verti, quod nesciamus quo pacto huic aut illi intentioni satisfacere debeamus, sed quod non sciamus quænam sit illa intentio cui satisfaciendum est cum vel rudissimus quispiam pharmacopolæ servulus intra dimidium horæ quadrantem certum me faciat quonam medicamento Vomitionem, purgationem vel sudores provocabo, vel refrigerabo æstuantem: At vero in palæstra medica probe excitatus sit oportet, qui pari certitudine me docere queat, ubi hoc vel illud remediorum Genus in usum revocare debeam, per omnem morborum ac curationum Circuitum.* SYDENH. Tract. de Hydrop.

To find out proper Remedies for Distempers we should penetrate into the Nature and Cause of them: Their Knowledge, according to *Galen*, (a) leads us to a just Indication, and the Choice of the true Remedy which we ought to apply.

This Doctrine exactly fits the Distemper we speak of, and if we may believe *Lister* (b) it is only incurable by Reason that we don't know the Cause of it.

In order to learn the Nature of it, we shall propose (1.) the Description of the Disease, and its Symptoms. (2.) We shall examine the Carcasses of Animals that died of it. (3.) The Analogism. (4.) The happy or unhappy Success of Remedies. (5.) Our Experience, our Observations, and our Method to prevent and cure the Hydrophobia.

These Means are far preferable to all the Efforts of Imagination to explain the Hydrophobia; all the Notions of saline Ferments with which the Dissertations abound, are at present

(a) *Medicus si suffecerit ad cognoscendum sufficet et ad curandum, prima namque remediorum inventio est cognitio morbi. Gal.*

Si morbi cujusdam naturam et causas perspectas haberem, huic par malo remediorum nunquam non possem adferre varijs ejusdem Phænomenis viam qua mihi incedendum foret haud dubium præmonstrantibus, quæ quidem Phænomena si inter se sedulo conferantur manu quasi ducerent ad indicationes illas maxime obvias, quæ ex intimo naturæ sensu non vero ex Phantasie erroribus depromuntur. Sydenh. in præfatione.

(b) *Quæri potest cur Hydrophobia morbus sit insanabilis: Respondeo. 1. ob causam fortasse adignoratam; ideoque remedia recte adhiberi non potuerunt, Lister exercit. Med. de Hydrophobia.*

200 A DISSERTATION

look'd upon by sound Physicians as (a) learned and well invented Fables, which dazzle Reason without guiding it. These ingenious Lecheries (to make use of *Mezeray's* Expression) with which the Mind is amused, make us neglect the sound and solid Nutriment to be collected from Observation, Experience and Application.

Sydenham observes that great Physiologists are commonly but midling Practitioners (b).

Who had a more luxurious Imagination than *Descartes*? He published a quite new Philosophy of his own Produce. *Novam de suo Philosophiam instituit.* *Bauduer.*

Who can speak and think like Father *Malebranche*; nevertheless who would have employed either the one or the other for his Physician? *Non fingendum aut excogitandum, sed inveniendum quid natura faciat aut ferat.* *Bacon.*
 "We should not invent and guess, but find out
 "what Nature is doing."

Virgil (a) calls Physick a dumb Art, *mutas Artes*: The mysterious Poet would give us to un-

(a) *Accidit ut præclara quæque ingenia doctis et eruditis illis fabulis quasi delinita, ad crassiores, ut aiunt, descendere Minervam, hoc est ad medicamentorum vires periclitandas descendere non solum pigeat verum etiam pudeat.* *Bagl. in praxi med. lib. 2.*

(b) *Te tamen natura ad eas potius subtilitates determinaverit, quæ e praxi nascuntur, quam ad inanes speculationes, quæ duo haud minori intervallo à se invicem distant, quam sapientum res seriæ ac maximi momenti à puerorum ludo et crepundiis distendentur, et fortasse, nisi mea me fellat observatio, rardè in eodem subjecto conveniunt.* *Sydenh. præfat. de prodagra.*

(a) In his ingenious Poem of the *Aeneids*, which *St. Augustin* speaks of with Praise

Phæbo

understand, that Physick requires rather Reflection and Meditation, than Words and Eloquence; and Sydenham tells us, that the time others spend in Reading he imployes in Meditation: *Ut quod alii librorum lectioni id omne ego meditationi impendere soleo.*

Such an exact and sincere Description of a Distemper as the now mentioned Author demands in his Preface, relating all the Symptoms great and little, and distinguishing Accidents from pathognomonick and inseparable Signs, without espousing any particular System, is of great Help to discover the Cause of the Disease, and to take hold of proper Indications.

Dissection is a kind of Torture performed after the Death of Animals, to make Nature confess the Truth, which lay concealed whilst the Animal was alive.

Analogical Reasoning has been received by all Physicians as a candid Means to discover the Mysteries of Nature, and to find out Remedies proper for the Disorder. (a)

The Light we receive from the *juvantia & ledentia*, "what helps and hurts," carries the Day, and ought to be preferred in Physick before geometrical Demonstration, and the best concerted Ideas are vain, useless, and superfluous, if they are not conformable to and in a

Phæbo ante alios dilectus iapis,

Ille potestates herbarum usumque medendi;

Maluit et MUTAS agitare inglorius ARTES.

(a) *Riverius de remediorum inventione.*

man-

202 A DISSERTATION

manner built upon the happy and unhappy Successes of Medicines.

In short Experience puts as it were the Seal of Truth upon the Theory of Physick, which is never marked with a good Dye but when Experience authorises it, and sides with it.

We shall follow these several Means in separate Articles, to discover the true Cause of the *Rabies*; and if we are happy enough to succeed, we hope that the Clearness will be an Evidence of it. One of the Properties of Truth is to strike the Mind in such a Manner, that it is not able to resist its Force.

I compare the true Cause of a Disease to the Word of a Riddle. When you have found that, all the Thoughts of the enigmatical Poem square with it, and agree with it naturally, without straining the Sense; so likewise when you have found the Cause of the Evil, and that you have dived into the Secrets of Nature, the Explanation of all the Symptoms, the Effects of the Remedies are all very easy, and in a manner of speaking every thing explains itself.

C H A P. I.

Of the Description of the Hydrophobia and of its Symptoms.

TH E Hydrophobia is a contagious Disease which most commonly is communicated by the Bite of some mad Animal. The Wound made with the Teeth is cured and heals frequently

quently of itself, without Remedies, and in a short time, but the Patient runs no less a Risque for it.

Some Days after the Bite, he grows thoughtful, his Imagination runs upon uncommon Ideas, his Sleep is interrupted, he is fatigued with terrible Dreams, and wakes in a Surprise and frightened.

The Conversation of his best Friends and of his Servants become troublesome, his Aspect frightful, he cannot bear the Light, he covets Solitude and Obscurity.

These Symptoms which I here relate ought to be placed among the accidental ones, and are not always Forerunners, of the Hydrophobia, since the Fear, and Consternation which strikes the Mind of Persons that are bit, are capable of producing them. I have seen a Lady of great Worth, bit by a mad Dog, who had them almost every one, and who nevertheless was preserved from the Hydrophobia, as may be seen in the first Observation.

When the Disorder makes its Progress the Face grows red and chiefly the Eyes. Convulsions and Delirium come on, the Patient feels a violent Pain at his Stomach every time he swallows his Spit; he speaks low between his Teeth; he has involuntary Tremblings all over his Body, and falls into Convulsions every time he drinks; he hates Drinking and detests Water, the Sight of which makes him quake; his Spit full of Bubbles froths at his Mouth,
like

204 A DISSERTATION

like that of an Epileptic Person ; and lastly he dies in Convulsions.

These last Accidents are the proper and pathognomonic ones, especially the Aversion to Water, and from this Symptom is derived the Name of Hydrophobia which is given to this Madness.

It is to be observed 1.) that this Fear of Water doth not come at once, but by Degrees; the Patient begins first to be indifferent about Drinking, he afterwards finds that he has a Pain at his Stomach, the Hick-up and Convulsions after Drinking, he abhors Water so as to tremble and quake when he sees any, even when he hears it mentioned. We shall endeavour to account for this Phænomenon in our Hypothesis about the Cause of the Hydrophobia.

2.) That the common time marked for the breaking out of the Symptoms of the Hydrophobia is a Term of 40 Days ; and altho' some have gone on much longer, even many Years, as *Schenkius*, *Sennertus*, *Etmuller*, &c. relate, these are to be look'd upon as uncommon Cases which make no Rule: *Rara non sunt artis*, "Uncommon Cases don't (properly) belong to the Art."

3.) That no one was ever cured whose Disorder was come so far as to fear Water. The Story of *Temison*, a Physician, reported by *Palmarius* and *Mathiolus* concludes nothing, besides it is the only one. It is not said, that *Temison* had been bit ; he contracted the Disorder

order in attending one of his best Friends who died of the Hydrophobia ; may it not be that his Complaints were only an Effect of his Imagination work'd upon during many Days by the Symptoms of the *Rabies*, which he constantly had before his Eyes, persuading himself at last that he had contracted it ? His Recovery might be a Proof that his Madness was only imaginary.

4.) Those who believe that this Disorder resides only in the Mind and Imagination struck with Fear, are mistaken. Horses, Mules, Asses, *quibus non est intellectus*, are not susceptible of that Passion, and yet some of them have died of the *Rabies* this Year. Besides we have seen Persons who did not think of their being bit, who had forgot the Accident, and had no manner of Apprehension, and died of the Hydrophobia.

5.) Authors have observed, and Experience confirms it, that those who have been bit in the Face, especially above the Teeth, are in greater Danger, and perish sooner of the *Rabies* than those who are bit elsewhere. Secondly, those who are bit in some Part uncovered, as in the Hand, or the Leg, wearing no Stockings, like our Peasants in the Country, have more to fear than such as are bit in Parts that are cloathed, as the Arm, the Thigh, &c.

The Reason of this Diversity proceeds from hence, because the Venom of the *Rabies* resides in the Saliva, as we shall explain in its Place ; it enters into the Blood through the
Opening

Opening made by the mad Creature's Teeth, much after the manner of inoculating the Small-Pox. In the first Case the Mixture of the Poison is easily made, the Face being full of small Blood Vessels and very near the Brain: In the second Case the Poison may also be easily received, but in the third Case it is difficult, the Cloaths retain the Saliva, and the Teeth are wiped dry in piercing them.

It is to be observed that the *Rabies* may be communicated without any Opening or Wound, by a mad Creature's Spittle touching only the human Body, as *Galen* reports *in rabido vero fit tanta humorum Commotio, ut si vel ejus sputum humanum Corpus tetigerit, etiam rabiem excitare poterit.* *Cælius Aurelianus* makes mention of a Semstrefs, who as she was mending of Cloaths tore by a mad Dog, bit the Thread off with her Teeth, upon which she contracted the *Hydrophobia*, and died of it.

C H A P. II.

Some anatomical Observations made at the opening of the Carcases of mad Creatures.

BARTHOLIN cent. 3. observ. 48. reports that Worms are found in the Heads of mad Horses, Sheep and Oxen: *Notandum id imprimis de equis, bobus et ovibus, vermes ita affectorum Capiti inesse rusticorum nostrorum est observatio.*

We find in *Bonetus's Anatomy*, p. 212. an Observation taken from *Christianus Franciscus Paulini*,

Paulini, in *Cynographia Curiosa*, of which the following is an Abstract.

“ As I travelled in a Chaise, from *Hamburg*
 “ into *Saxony*, a Shepherd’s Dog that was
 “ mad came up to us in the Evening, and a
 “ Surgeon, *Tobias Lork*, shot him dead with a
 “ Pistol. After Supper he asked me many
 “ Questions concerning the *Hydrophobia*, and
 “ told me he should be glad to open the Head
 “ of this Animal to satisfy himself about the
 “ Cause of this Distemper. I applauded his
 “ Desire and his Curiosity; we opened the Cra-
 “ nium, and we were surpris’d to Admiration
 “ to find there an infinite Number of Worms,
 “ some lying in Clusters, and others crawling
 “ about.

“ Whilst we were about this Dissection, an
 “ old Shepherd came to us, out of Curiosity,
 “ and as he saw us astonish’d at the Sight of
 “ these Worms, he fell a laughing, saying, I
 “ have never studied, yet this is no new thing
 “ to me, we observe the same in our Sheep.
 “ Tell us the Truth, says I. Gentlemen, an-
 “ swer’d he, you see these Worms, they are
 “ mad Worms, or rather they are those Worms
 “ which occasion Madness, they bite the Brains
 “ of the Animals, and make them run mad.
 “ We offer’d him some Gratuity, and said to
 “ him, Good old Man, we beg you would tell
 “ us seriously if the thing is as you report
 “ it. Whereupon wrinkling his Forehead,
 “ and striking his Breast, I am, said he, an in-
 “ firm old Man, and have one Foot in the
 Grave,

“ Grave, however I am not doating, why
 “ should I disguise the Truth? The D—l
 “ take me if I tell you a Lie.”

Etmuller in his Treatise of Deliriums, p. 504. says that you may see Insects crawling in the Saliva and Urine of mad Creatures. *Animalia generantur, et conspiciuntur in saliva et lotio rabidorum.*

Salmouth, Cent. 2. Obs. 83. reports that a Woman was bit in the Fringe of her Petticoat by a mad Dog; and hanging it up in the Air to dry it, she perceived in the place where the Bite was, and the Spittle was spread about, little Animalcula, the Heads of which resembled those of Dogs.

If you desire more authentick Attestations of the Existence of these Worms in the *Rabies*, you may find some in the most antient times, in *Avicenna*, Ch. 7. Tract. 4. *Fernel*. l. 5. C. 4. in *Alzabaravius* Chap. 30. Sect. 2. Tract. 3. Praet. in *Cardua* Cent. 7. Tract. 2. Lib. 2. in *Nicolas Florentin*. Serm. 4. Tract. 4. C. 15. In *Valleriola Comm. ad libr. de Constitutione artis Med. Gal.* In *Matthiolus* Com. ad Cap. 36. L. 6. *Dioscoridis*. In *Thomas à Viega* Com. in Cap. 84. *artis puræ Galen*.

This Number of Facts reported by so many different Authors of various times, amounts to a compleat Proof; and the Silence of Authors which make no mention of it cannot overthrow such numerous Evidences, *Validiora sunt testimonia affirmantium quam negantium*,
 “ The Testimonies of those who affirm are

“ more valid than of those who deny.” It must even be attributed to the little Care in opening the Brain, in that Part where the Worms fasten; you’ll see a Proof of the Insufficiency of this Enquiry in the 2d Observation of *Henricus Breschfeld. Cerebrum non introspectum, quia instrumenta ad Calvariæ depositionem non ad manum erant.* “ The Brain was not examined, “ because the Instruments to open the Skull “ were not at Hand.”

These Facts being thus established, we may without any ridiculous Credulity persuade ourselves that the Poison of the Hydrophobia consists in these little Worms, the same Insects which you see swimming in the Saliva of mad Creatures, and which are found in the Brain.

These Worms penetrate into the Blood through the Wound, which the mad Creature makes with its Teeth, they increase afterwards in the Subject that has received them, and when they are come to a certain Number, they attack the Brain, the Throat and Salival Glands, cause Deliriums, Convulsions, froth about the Mouth, and at last Death itself.

If Worms in the Intestines, by the Correspondence of their Nerves with the Brain, are capable of producing Deliriums, and Convulsions and Death itself, it is reasonable to believe that a certain ill conditioned sort of Worms, which immediately seize the Brain and the salival Glands, must produce the same and much more terrible Symptoms.

210 A DISSERTATION

We should not be surprized that these Worms chiefly attack the Brain, since we see a certain sort of grey and ash coloured Lice love the Head, and a white sort spread all over the Body; in like manner we also see certain kind of Birds inhabit Woods, and others marshy Places, &c. *Meniot Tract. de phthisi.*

The Aversion which a Person under this Distemper has for Water and Drinking, comes on by Degrees; he perceives first that swallowing his Spittle gives him violent Pains in his Stomach (a), and that Drinking flings him into Convulsions. These Symptoms no doubt arise, because in swallowing of Liquids, some of the Worms are washed down into the Stomach, which occasion these Disorders there. Is there need of any thing else to set him against Drinking?

The Soul by the Laws of Union, concerns herself for the Preservation of the Body with which she is united; sad Experience gives her a deep Sense of cruel Pains from swallowing the Spittle or Drinking. This is sufficient to inspire her with Horror, in like manner, as we take an Antipathy to certain Eatables which have disordered us.

The Difference of a mad Dog's Spittle from that of another which is not so, is that you

(a) *Jam propriam salivam ægre deglutiebat, quod ipsi, ut nobis serio multoties asseveravit, vel morte pejus erat. Lister ægrot. 1. de Hydrophobia.*

At Salivam deglutire ei horrendum fuit perinde, ac si mortem ipso momento inferret. Lister ibid.

find little Worms in it: for which Reason it is venomous, whereas the other which has none is of a balsammick Nature.

Æsculapius is represented to us in painting with a Dog and a Goat; he made use of Goats Milk for internal Disorders, and of the Spittle of Dogs for Wounds and Ulcers.

It may not be improper to quote here a Thought of *Mathiolus*, who is of Opinion that Dogs are more subject to Madness than other Animals, because they eat Carrion; perhaps these rotten Carcases are proper Matrixes to hatch these mad Worms, which stick to the Dog's Spittle whilst he is feeding.

This Conjecture is supported by Experience, which shews that mad Dogs are more frequent in the Country, because they meet there with more Carrion; whereas in Towns where they are better fed, altho' the Number of those, for Example, that are at *Bordeaux* surpasses that of the whole Province, this Distemper is more scarce there, not to say unknown, unless it is introduced from the Country.

The System which I here propose about the Cause of the Hydrophobia seems to me plain and natural; it is not built upon Supposition, for the Cause appears evidently even to the Eye of an old Man without the help of a Microscope or Spectacles; and I hope to add Proof upon Proof to evince the Truth hereof. At least it has the Advantage of presenting the Hydrophobia under an Aspect susceptible of Cure.

C H A P. III.

Of Analogical Reasoning.

ANALOGICAL Reasoning has been look'd upon in all Ages as a candid Means of discovering Truth: It is by this that Anatomy is arriv'd at the high Degree of Perfection it now is, and for its greatest Discoveries we are beholden to comparative Anatomy, that is to say, to the Analogy of the Bodies of Brutes to that of a Man.

The Consequences that are drawn from Analogy are so much the more conclusive as Nature is uniform in her Operations. A Proof of this we see in the Generation of Animals, in Digestion, Life, progressive Motion, and also in the Production of Distempers. Let us observe a few Particulars.

What Variety soever we observe in the Generation of Animals, Nature follows constantly in all the same Artifices, and makes use of the Means of Eggs, and tho' she employs several Ways to hatch them, she is nevertheless always uniform in all her Variety in the Secret of their Production, that is to say, the Principle of Generation is always an Egg, so that it is now-a-days an Axiom universally received by all Philosophers, *omne animal ex ovo*. "All Animals arise from Eggs."

The Variety which Nature employs to hatch the Eggs, is no Effect of a whimsical
I Fancy,

Fancy, she has been forced to have Recourse to it for very just Reasons.

In Birds it was necessary that their Eggs should be laid in Nests to be hatched there, that not only the Seed should be lock'd up in their Shell, but also its Nourishment during their Brooding; without this prudent and wise Disposition, what Bird could have flown about if he had carried 6, 8, 10, or 12 Fœtus's in his Belly?

It would have been also very troublesome to them to look for Aliments, either for their own Nourishment or that of their Fœtus's, and to rear them up.

This Attention of Nature to provide Birds with Aliments has obliged her to vary about the Number of her young ones. Those Birds which brood on the Ground, as Partridges, Pheasants, Quails, &c. have a great Number of young; because as soon as they are hatch'd they can look out for their Nourishment on the Ground themselves, since Nature has taken Care they should be hatch'd only at a Season when the Ground is covered with Corn. As to those who have Nests on Trees, like the Turtles, Linnets, Black-birds, &c. or under the Roofs of Houses, as Pigeons, Swallows, &c. Nature has reduced their Brood to 2 or 4; for as they are obliged to feed their young till they can fly, she has curtailed their Number to lessen in Proportion the Trouble of feeding them; but to lose nothing of her Views to increase them,

she makes them breed twice or three times a Year.

As Fishes were designed as well for the Nourishment of Man, as of each other, their Generation was to be multiplied *ad infinitum* consequently it was impossible to charge the Mother with the Trouble of hatching a Million of Eggs, which she spawns upon the Shoar, but it was necessary to commit the Care of them to the Heat of the Sun, the great Spring of Nature.

Without this infinite Production the Sea would be drained of Fish; it is surprising what a prodigious Quantity of them are caught upon our Coast, and the Art and Industry of our Fishermen who improve every Day, shews the Riches of the Sea.

It would be needless to carry this physical Enquiry, rather curious than useful, any farther, and we have no need of drawing any other Consequences from it than this, that notwithstanding all the different Means Nature employs to hatch the Eggs, she retains constantly her Uniformity in the secret and principal Mystery of Generation, *viz.* the Means of Eggs. *Omne animal ex ovo.*

This Uniformity is continued in the Generation of Plants, which are all produced from Grains, which *Aristotle* compares to Eggs. *Naiou's* Experiment doth not at all weaken this Truth, he found that Earth taken out of a Well and put on the top of a House produces Plants there. This Phænomenon proceeds

ceeds from hence, that there are several Seeds furnished with kinds of Fethers, which are not only carried about by the Wind, but are alfo attracted by the Ground where they are to take Root, and it is not furprifing that the Wind fhould carry fome Seeds upon the tops of Houfes.

The progreflive Motion of Animals, fo different in Man, in Quadrupeds and creeping Infefts, the flying of Birds, and the fwimming of Fifhes bear Witnefs of the Uniformity of Nature. Examine the Organs which execute them, and you'll find that it is through the Means of Articulation and Mufcles, and this infinite Diverfity acknowledges ftill for Principle the fame Induftry of Nature.

The Digestion of Aliments is alfo uniform, be it either explained by Fermentation or Trituration. This laft manner answers beft to that Simplicity which Nature affects every where.

If we confider with Attention, and without Prejudice the Organs of Digestion in feveral forts of Animals, it is not to be queftioned but this important Function, fo much contefted, is the Effect of Trituration.

In certain Birds, for Example, it is beyond Difpute that the Digestion is performed by this Means; that powerful hollow Mufcle which *Aristotle* calls the Mill, capable of a Spring and a powerful Contraction, bruises the Grains which the Birds fwallow whole by the Affiftance of the Pebbles which

are found in its Cavity; this Fact no one denies. Digestion therefore is not performed in them by the help of a Leaven, it is by bruising the Aliments between these Pebbles.

In Animals which chew the Cud you find a Disposition of Organs proper for Trituration, and Teeth formed in a Manner proper for cutting the Greens they are to feed upon. Four Stomachs, of which the first throws the Nourishment bit by bit back again into the Mouth, to be chop'd and bruised at Pleasure, whilst the Animal takes its rest, or even is at Work. The second Stomach is full of Cells and Plates, into which the Nourishment passes through a Canal hollowed like a Gutter, without coming back into the first. The Third Stomach is furnished with Plates full of little Tuberosities resembling the Risings of a Grate; these Plates are disposed in such a Manner, that they fit one against the other, and that the Cavity of this Stomach is quite covered with them, so that nothing can pass through this Bowel without undergoing the Pressure of these Plates and being exposed to the Frictions of these Tuberosities, like unto Grates, which the Contraction of this Bowel, and the Movements from Respiration put in Play.

Lastly, The Chyle pretty well prepared passes from this Stomach into the Fourth, where by the help of a new Trituration it is brought to the last Perfection.

Who can imagine that Nature simple in herself and in her Works, should have put herself

to an Expenſe in vain, in forming ſo many Stomachs in Animals chewing the Cud ; if by the help of a digeſtive Leaven, in what Manner however it may be ſuppoſed, ſhe could have arrived at converting their Aliments into Chyle by a prompt Diſſolution.

In Man we find no Pebbles as in Birds, nor 4 Stomachs as in Animals chewing the Cud but a Hand and Ingenuity. That Hand which *Galen* cannot admire ſufficiently, diſtinguiſhing Man from other Animals, and which, aſſiſted by Reaſon, renders him capable of great Works and Exploits. That Hand which the ſame Author calls *Organum organorum, instrumentum instrumentorum*, “ the Organ of Organs, the Tool of Tools,” is equivalent to all ; by the help of the Hand he builds Mills to grind the Corn, upon which Man according to *Gaſſendi* ſhould live chiefly ; he ſifts the Meal, makes a Paſte of it, kneads it, ferments and bakes it, to make Bread of it ; this principal Nouriſhment of almoſt all Mankind, which wants nothing to become Chyle but to be mixed with Liquids, ſifted and reſifted in the Stomach by the alternative Contraction of the Muſcles of the lower Belly, and of the Diaphragm, is kneaded by the Liver, Melt, the Cells of the Colon, the Pancreas, which like ſo many Fiſts preſs continually upon the Stomach and the Aliments contained therein, and convert it into a white Liquid, called Chyle.

After it has paſſed into the ſmall Inteſtines, by the Help of the membranous Circles
which

which we see there, like the Rings in the perspective Glasses, its Descent is not only retarded, running in a Manner of speaking from one Story to another; but these membranous Plates, which I compare to the Leaves of the third Stomach of Animals chewing the Cud, coming close to one another when the Intestines contract longwise, by the Assistance of its longitudinal Fibres, press and bruise the Chyle, render it more fluid, and also promote its entering into the Orifices of the lacteal Veins.

The Idea of Trituration has always appeared to me the most simple and natural to explain Digestion, from the time it has been explained in the Writings of the Learned Dr. *Hequet*. If you are desirous of seeing a simple Experiment, put some pounded Bread and Water into a Bladder, work it by pressing it with your Hands four Hours, and you'll find it reduc'd into a white Cream like Chyle. All the Experiments which *Vareyen* has try'd to imitate Digestion, have not been able to produce any thing that resembled Chyle like this; and this celebrated Anatomist almost out of Humour with Fermentation inclines to the Doctrine of Trituration.

Qua vero ratione cibus in Stomacho digeratur, convertaturque in Chylum, necdum sufficiente Ratione aut Experientia stabilitum est . . . Ego vero consideratis utrinque rationibus adhuc hærens animo ad experientiam tamquam ad optimam magistram me converti, ab ea doceri desiderans, an quidam liquores secundum artem cum alimentis

alimentis digesti, in iis aliquam chylicationis similitudinem producerent. Sumpsi itaque panem cum pauco butyro et parum pomi acido dulcis masticati, adjuncta aliquali cerevisiæ quantitate, pro more hujus patriæ, quod compositum ad digestionem valde idoneum judicabam. Hanc mixturam secundum diversas partes indidi diversis vesiculis, quarum uni adjeci aliquot guttas Spiritus Vitrioli, alteri Spiritus Salis, tertiæ nitri, et alijs unum quendam alium liquorem, aut plures adjunxi, unicam solum partem reliqui puram, alijsque non permixtam.

Hasce Vesiculas ligaturis, distinctionis gratia, varijs ac differentibus constrictas immisi aquæ calidæ, quam per horas circiter octo detinui in eo caloris gradu, quem cum nostro Stomacho proxime convenire arbitrabar. Verum finita operatione nil aliud laboris præmium retuli, nisi quod viderem me naturæ methodum, in cibo dissolvendo, hac via nondum detexisse: Siquidem ubi in sano Stomacho cibus ille indubie breviori tempore fuisset perfecte chylificatus, eundem in dictis vesiculis vix notabiliter mutatum reperi. . . .

Insuper verisimile est cibum in Ventriculo etiam aliquatenus comminui et quasi atteri per ejus latera, motu peristaltico et agitatione partium adjacentium in eundem cibum jugiter impulsæ. Nec refert quod impulsus ille non sit adeo validus, neque Ventriculi latera dura et scindentia, cum etiam Corpus atterendum non sit adeo firmum, et quia id Stomacho diu hæret latera illa sæpissime impelluntur in eandem ejus partem, proinde sicuti videmus grana admodum dura

dura in momento comminui et atteri a lapide molari duro et acuto; ita suspicari possum cibum mollem et prævie vel masticatione, vel artificiali præparatione multum diminutum decursu temporis ulterius diminui per dictum impulsu, nam ut est in proverbio,

Gutta cavat lapidem non vi sed sæpe cadendo. Vareyen Suplem. Anat. Tract. 4. C. 2.

“ But in what Manner the Aliments are digested in the Stomach, and converted into Chyle, is not yet sufficiently established by Reason or Experience.... And as after having considered the Reasons on both Sides I was yet doubtful, I had Recourse to Experiments as the best Teachers, desirous of Learning from them, whether any Liquors digested according to Art with some Aliments would produce any thing like Chilification. I therefore took Bread with a little Butter, and some chewed Apple of a subacid Taste, adding to it a small Quantity of Beer according to the Custom of this Country, which Composition I judged very proper for Digestion. This Mixture, according to the several Sorts, I put into different Bladders, with one of which I mixed some Drops of Oil of Vitriol, with another some Spirit of Salt, with the Third Spirit of Nitre, and with others some other Liquor, or more than one. And one Part I left pure and not mix'd with any other.

“ These Bladders ty'd up with different Threads for Distinction sake, I put into
warm

“ warm Water, and kept them there for about 8
“ Hours in such a Degree of Heat, as I thought
“ coming nearest to that of our Stomachs:
“ But when the Operation was over, I got no
“ other Recompence for my Labour, but that
“ I saw I had not yet discovered by this Method
“ the way Nature used to dissolve the Ali-
“ ments; for as in a sound Stomach these
“ Victuals would without doubt in less time
“ have been perfectly turned into Chyle, I
“ found they had hardly suffered any consi-
“ derable Alteration. . . .

“ Besides it is probable that the Aliments
“ are also somewhat broke in the Stomach, and
“ rubbed small by its Sides through the peri-
“ staltic Motion and Agitation of the adjacent
“ Parts continually pressing upon it. And it
“ is not material that this Impulse is not so
“ very strong, nor the Sides of the Stomach
“ hard and cutting, since also the Body to
“ be rubbed is not very solid, and as it re-
“ mains long in the Stomach its Sides are fre-
“ quently impelled upon the same Particles, in
“ like Manner as we see very hard Grains
“ reduced to Powder in an Instant by the
“ hard and sharp Mill-stone; so we may also
“ suspect that the soft, and by Mastication
“ and artificial Preparation already triturated
“ Food, is still more bruised by length of time
“ by the said impelling Force; for as the Pro-
“ verb says,

Gutta cavat lapidem non vi, sed sæpe cadendo,
Vareyen Suplem. Anat. Tract. 4. Cap. 2. p. 25.

“ The dropping of Water makes a Hole in
 “ the Stone not by its Force but by falling
 “ often.”

The Cooks do in respect to Flesh Meat
 what the Baker doth with regard to Bread,
 they make it soft, prepare and work it, make
 Broth, and Jelly Broth with it, which want
 nothing but to pass into the Blood to be there
 beaten by the Contraction of the Heart and
 Arteries ; it is even not absolutely necessary
 that they should pass into the Stomach.

For I have nourish'd 17 Days a Patient with
 Broth Clysters, without his taking any thing at
 the Mouth. I quote for ocular Witnesses of
 this Experiment Mr. *Cazaux*, the Father, who
 attended the Patient with Mr. *Manadé*. I have
 likewise kept alive with Success a young Lady
 of great Merit, and related to several of the
 Officers of Parliament, during 14 Days also
 with broth Clysters, witness Mr. *Dutan* an
 Apothecary : I was obliged to fall into this
 Method to stop a violent Vomiting, which
 every thing aggravated, and which became
 at last bloody, attended with Convulsions : Wa-
 ter, Ptisan, Broth, Laudanum, Syrup of Pop-
 pies, became all emetick. You will see these
 Observations in his Treatise *de Medicina Burde-*
galensium.

The Hypothesis about Trituration will meet
 with the same Fate as the Doctrine of the Cir-
 culation

culatation of the Blood : How many Dissertations were published against *Harvey* when it appeared? How many Theses against the Circulators? The *French Comedian* has one of them in his *malade imaginaire* ; nevertheless, Truth gets the upperhand, all the Universities in the World have at present adopted it. *Quæ fundantur in natura crescunt, quæ in opinione confunduntur.* “ Things that are founded in Nature grow, “ but when built upon Opinion they are over- “ thrown.”

A Modern Author compares the Ideas grounded upon Speculation, to those impetuous Winds which grow weaker in Proportion to the Distance they go from the Place where they took their Origin ; and the Ideas founded upon Nature to those Rivers which grow Bigger the farther they run from their Source. *Eo majores volunt undas, eo amplioribus feruntur, alvus quo longius ab origine recesserit.* Bagl. prax. med.

And lastly, we see Nature is uniform in regard to the Life of Animals and Plants ; it is supported by a continual Circulation of Blood in those, and of Sap in these. Respiration is found every where, even in Fishes, tho’ in a different manner.

The Law of Uniformity which Nature has assumed in her natural Operations is extended and continued to the Production of Diseases. *Et profecto haud minus se natura adstringit in morbis tum producendis tum maturandis, quam in plantis sive etiam animalibus.* Syd. in præ- “ fat.

fat. " Nature is as methodical in producing
 " and ripening of Diseases, as of Plants and Ani-
 " mals.

What variety soever, for example, we may observe in intermittent Fevers, as Quartans, double and triple Quartans, Tertians, and double Tertians, Quotidians, and other Disorders which depend from that Cause in Disguise, of which *Morton* has composed a Chapter, intitled, *De Protei formi febris intermittentis genio*. Notwithstanding these different Marks, it is still the same Cause that produces them, and which differs in all these Sorts only as the greater and less, accordingly the Bark cures all those Disorders.

How great is the variety which we observe in hysteric Convulsions, commonly called Vapours? *Sed nec spectabilior est bujus morbi frequentia quam varietas illa multiformis qua se prodit, quam nec Proteus lusit unquam.* Syden. Nevertheless, it is the same Cause which furnishes the same Indication, and which requires the same Remedies.

After so many Examples of the Uniformity of Nature, who can doubt but all contagious Distempers depend upon the same Cause and Principle, making an Allowance for the Degrees of greater and lesser. Doth it not appear evident that Nature employs the same Artifice to communicate the Infection in all Distempers under this Character?

If we allow that in one single contagious Distemper the Infection arises from Worms, it
 amounts

amounts to near a Proof that all others do so too, and consequently the Hydrophobia, which is none of the meanest upon the Catalogue of contagious Diseases.

Now I advance as an indisputable Fact, that there are contagious Diseases which proceed from Insects that are conveyed from one Body to the other; for Example, the itching occasioned by Crab-Lice, the cutaneous Worms, the Itch, and Ulcers in which you may see little Worms swarm, as has been attested by Surgeons of Credit and Reputation.

The Venereal Disease is propagated by Worms, which in Conjunction pass from one Body to another. We may read a Proof of it in Holy Scripture, which appears exact and formal. . . . " He that cohabits with prostituted Women will be Shameless; Rottenness and Worms will seize his Body like an Inheritance; he will be a great Example of Reproach, and his Soul will be erased from the Book of the Living, *Eccles.*"

But without constraining the Imagination in Matters of Philosophy by scriptural Authority; I think I have proved from natural Consequences, in the Treaty on the Venereal Disease, that all contagious Distempers, as the Itch, Tetter, King's Evil, Plague, Pox, Scurvy, Hydrophobia, &c. are occasioned by Worms of different Sorts.

I shall quit here the analogical Reasoning, to take it up again, when I shall propose the Remedy to prevent and cure the Hydrophobia.

Q

CHAP.

C H A P. IV.

Of the good and bad success of the Remedies proposed to cure the Hydrophobia.

THE Indication taken from the *Juvantia* and *Lædientia*, what helps and hurts; that is, the Attention given to the good and bad Effects of Remedies, is a sure Means of arriving at the Knowledge of the Nature of the Disease and its Causes, and you draw as just Consequences from the Effects of Remedies, as false Indications from speculative Hypotheses, which often are the Effect of Imagination heated with composing them.

To establish this important practical Maxim, Sydenham proposes himself as a Model: “ For
 “ Example, says he, I don’t make use of Steel
 “ and other Remedies, strengthening the Blood
 “ and Animal Spirits in hysterical Disorders,
 “ and abstain from Purgatives and other Evacuations; because I imagine that in the first
 “ Place, the Evil comes from Weakness and
 “ Lowness of both, but having always observed that Purgings increased the Disorder, and
 “ that Medicines opposite to them cured it, I
 “ have founded my Hypothesis upon this Success. It is in a manner of Speaking a Philosopher explaining the Operations of an
 “ Empyrick. But if I had begun to forge my
 “ Hypothesis, and had pretended to deduce
 “ from thence the Indications for the Remedies, I should have been like those who in
 “ building a House, begin with making the
 “ Top

“ Top before the Foundation is laid, or to
“ those who, as the Proverb says, build Castles
“ in the Air.”

Let us begin the Examination of the Remedies for the Hydrophobia with the Bathing in the Sea, which is authorised by public Confidence, and by the unanimous Consent of all Nations.

This has not succeeded, as has been said, in this public Calamity, among so many unhappy Persons of both Sexes, which have died here within 6 or 7 Months; not one of them had failed making use of it.

It is not only this Year that it has been unsuccessful, my Uncle *Daubaignan* at *St. Sever*, died of the Hydrophobia. *Dufourc*, my Fellow-Student at *Pau*, died also of it, they both had been to dip in the Sea, and had set out the next Day after they were bit. I could swell this Dissertation with a great number of other unhappy Creatures to whom Bathing in the Sea availed nothing.

I have seen the Ceremony of it. They set the Patient upon his Knees in his Shirt upon the Sea-Shore; when the Wave comes too strong, Men duck his Head and his whole Body under Water; this is repeated to 9 times. He afterwards is dried and cloathed, and thinks himself secure.

We may easily account from our proposed System for the Insufficiency of this Bath, to preserve People from the Hydrophobia. Altho' Sea Salt put upon Flesh preserves it from

Worms, it cannot be imagined that a Bath used only for 5 or 6 Minutes, should penetrate into the Blood, and there destroy those Worms, which have already multiplied and fluctuate in its Serum.

The Sea Water hardens the Fibres of the Skin, and consequently closes the Orifice of the absorbent Pores, by which the Sea Salt might penetrate and enter, which therefore becomes useless.

The Diet upon Bread and Water during 40 Days, Scarification upon the Place bit, Application of a hot Iron, Bandage upon the Eyes for 9 Days, Powder of Crabs Claws, calcined Oyster Shells, Decoction of Daizy Root, white Rose Roots, particular Pancakes, and other Remedies cried up as Family Secrets, seem to be mere Trifles, and to owe their Reputation to this, that the Animal which had given the Bite was not mad, or if it was, the Bite was in a Place that had been covered, the Cloaths having imbibed the Poison swimming in the Saliva; or, lastly, it has so happened that it has not mixt with the Blood at the Opening which the mad Creature had made with its Teeth.

Schenkius in his Observations, *Lib. 7. pag. 833. obs. 32.* relates some miraculous Cures by the Intercession of Saints. *Divi Bellini Templum miraculorum frequentia celeberrimum et affluxu etiam hominum notissimum*, taken from *Cælius Rodiginus*, L. 17. C. 28. *Mathiolus* mentions this, *Comment. ad L. 6. C. 37. of Dioscorid.* he proposes also the miraculous

Church of St. *Vittau*, in *Apulia*, with the Hymn which the Person sings about this Church 3 Saturdays, running at Night, going 9 times round it.

*Alme Vitbe Pellicane,
Oram qui tenes Apulam,
Litusque Polignanicum,
Qui morsus rabidos levas,
Irasque Canum mitigas.
Tu Sancte rabiem asperam,
Rictusque Canis luridos,
Tu sævam prohibe luem;
I procul hinc rabies,
Procul hinc furor omnis abesto.*

O holy *Vitus Pellicanus*,
Who guards the *Apulian Coast*,
And the *Polignanic Shore*,
Who cures the Bite of mad Creatures,
And mitigates the Rage of Dogs.
O holy *Vitus* avert the dreadful Rage,
The dismal Howling of Dogs,
And the cruel Infection.
Madness get thee hence;
And Fury keep far from me.

We have also in this Country as well as in that mentioned by *Schenkius*, a famous Worship against the Hydrophobia, it is at *St. Peter's Church at Bruges*.

God forbid I should pretend to depreciate the Confidence People have for the Intercession

230 A DISSERTATION

of Saints, and the Efficacy of Prayer. I know nothing can resist its Force. *Petite et accipietis.* "Ask and it shall be granted you." But be it either that our Prayers are not accompanied with the Conditions requisite*, or that God doth not care to invert the Order of Nature, by granting daily new Miracles to those who ask them; I have often seen the Devotion of *Bruges* fail; and *Chonel* in his Oeconomical Dictionary says, he saw a Person who was grown mad at *Vaugirard*, altho' one of the Descendants of St. *Hubert* had touched him†.

God desires that we should pray, but also he wills that we should make use of the proper Remedies which he has given us; it would be despising the great Presents he made to our Forefathers, if we did not imploy them. *Ecce dedi vobis omnem herbam afferentem semen super terram, et universa ligna quæ habent in se-*

* We don't obtain from God, because we don't ask what we should ask. 1st, Reason.

We don't obtain, because we don't pray as we ought. 2^d, Reason, Tom. 1. Sermon upon Prayer by Father *Bourdaloue*.

† Five Years ago there was in this Country a Sharper, Titular Chevalier of St. *Hubert*, who pretended to be possessed of a Relick of the Saint of that Name. His Valet de Chambre sold a Piece of Horn, which he said was a Specific for the Bite of mad Creatures. This Imposture had cheated the Inhabitants of several Towns, by means of a certain number of Rabble in his Pay, who counterfeited Lameness, and whom he sent to the Places where he designed to make use of his Relick. He durst not come to *Bordeaux* altho' he was importuned to do it, fearing the Penetration of the late Lord *Argenson*, then Archbishop, and the clear Sightedness of our Magistrates. An Order came from Court to the Provost of *Gascony* to take him up; but he took another Road and escaped.

metipps

metipsis sementem generis sui. GENES. "Lo I
" have given unto you all the Herbs bearing
" Seed upon Earth, and all the Trees bearing
" of themselves Seed of their own Kind."
Prayers may procure a Blessing to the Reme-
dies, and a happy Effect.

Altho' the Cure of *Tobias's* Blindness was mi-
raculous, nevertheless it seems God was willing
that Nature should have some Share in it. The
Angel orders the Son to take the Gall of a cer-
tain Fish, to anoint his Father's Eyes and he was
cured. This Remedy has since continued a-
mong the Medicines, and we make use of the
Gall of Fishes or Animals to remove Specks
in the Eye.

Among the many Medicines which Authors
have proposed to prevent or cure the Hydro-
phobia, *Palmarius's* Powder bears the Bell,
and has been received by the Authors who
have wrote after him, as *Sennertus*, *Charras*,
L' Emeri, *Etmuller*, &c.

This Powder is composed of Plants which
are daily prescribed to kill Worms ; as
Wormwood, little Centaury, Mint, Sage, Rue,
Vervain, &c. it appears then that the whole
Virtue of this Powder consists in killing the
Worms of which we have spoke, or in hin-
dring them from propagating. Here is the
Description of this Powder, which I thought
proper to insert at length with the Passage from
Palmarius. I should have wrong'd his Latin
by translating it; he had been a Disciple of

232 A DISSERTATION

Fernelius, of whom he had not only got his Knowledge, but also his Stile.

Plurima veteres ad præcavendam hydrophobiam remedia Literis ac memoriæ commiserunt, ad eam vero jam natam profligandam perpauca illa efficacia esse multorum fide compertum est, hæc vero semper irrita longo medendi usu comperta sunt. Nam et Dioscorides ex iis, qui jam hoc vitium sensissent, neminem unquam servatum fuisse testatur. Et Celsus hydrophobia oppressis in angusto spem esse literis prodidit: Et nostra hæc ætate vulgus ea tentatos, dum nullo remedio resistui posse reputat, vitæ pariter ac morbo finem strangulatu imponunt. Sed nee præcautionis ratio à veteribus tradita in multis respondere comperta est. . . . Sed posteritatis industria certum jam ac minime fallax remedium inventum est: Quod et futuram hydrophobiam antevertere et præsentem extinguere, cohibereque possit, modo vulnus inflitum capitis partes ore superiores non attigerit, aut aqua elotum fuerit, alioquin in Angusto fere, quod veteres non animadvertisse miror, spes est. Præsentaneum nostrum alexipharmacum tradendum, quod solum neglectis catharticis medicamentis, omissa etiam vulneris cura, quocumque à morsu tempore usurpetur, certissimum ac tutissimum existit; ut quo nullum unquam Animal vidi quod non atrocis morbi periculum evitarit quacumque uteretur victus ratione. Rec. fol. Rut. Verben. Salv. min. Plantag. fol. poly-pod. absinth. vulg. Menth. Melissophill. betonic. hyperic Centaur. min. ana part. æquales. Misce et fiat omnium pulvis. dosis erit ʒj. aut circiter.

“ The

“ The Antients have mentioned in their
 “ Writings many Remedies to prevent the Hy-
 “ drophobia, but to cure it they are of little
 “ Service as many have attested, and by long
 “ Practice they have been found uselefs: for
 “ *Dioscorides* also witnesseth that he never saw
 “ one cured who had it; and *Celsus* mentions
 “ in his Writings that there is little Hopes
 “ for those who have the Hydrophobia; and
 “ at this time, when the common People
 “ think they cannot be cured they put an End
 “ to the Distemper and Life at once by smo-
 “ thering them. A sad and cruel Sight; but
 “ the Things mentioned by the Antients by
 “ way of Preservative, have been found insuf-
 “ ficient in many. . . . However, by the In-
 “ dustry of Posterity, a certain and infallible
 “ Alexipharmic has been found out; which
 “ not only prevents the Hydrophobia, but
 “ also cures it, provided the Wound has not
 “ been made in the Head above the Mouth,
 “ or wash’d with Water, otherwise there is
 “ but small Hopes, which I admire the An-
 “ tients should not have observed. We are to
 “ set down our Alexipharmic, which alone
 “ without any Cathartics, without looking after
 “ the Wound, or taken at any time after the
 “ Bite proves a certain and sure Remedy, so
 “ that I never saw any Creature use it which
 “ did not escape the Consequences of this hor-
 “ rid Distemper, what Diet soever they fol-
 “ lowed. Take of the Leaves of Rue, Ver-
 “ vain, Sage of Virtue, Plantain, Polipody, com-
 “ mon

234 A DISSERTATION

“ mon Wormwood, Mint, Baum, Betony, St.
 “ John’s Wort, lesser Centaury, equal Parts
 “ of all. Mix them, and reduce them to a
 “ Powder of which give one Scruple for a
 “ Dose, or thereabouts.

C H A P. V.

Experiments upon the Hydrophobia.

ALTHO’ this Chapter is only a Continu-
 ation of the foregoing, I judged proper to
 distinguish it, to set in a clearer Light the Re-
 medy which I am to propose to prevent and
 cure the Hydrophobia.

The Science of Physic owes her Birth to
 Experience. *Artem Experientia fecit Exemplo
 monstrante viam.* “ Experience has made the
 “ Art, Example shewing the Way.” She is
 also beholden to it for her Advancement, and
 above all for the Knowledge she has of Me-
 dicines.

It was not the Philosophy of the *Americans*,
 their Speculations upon Nature, and the Frame
 of the human Body that made them discover
 the Virtues of the Bark to cure intermittent
 Fevers, but it was Experience. This is to this
 very Day the surest Compass which rules and
 ought to rule the Ideas of Physick.

The Remedy which I have tried with con-
 stant Success, and which I propose to prevent
 and cure the Hydrophobia is the *Neapolitan*
 Ointment, made of one third part of Mercury,
 revived

revived from Cinnabar, one third part of human Fat, and as much of Hog's Lard.

This Ointment should be rubb'd upon the Wound, and round about one or two Drams at a time by Intervals, or successively as may be seen more at large from the Observations at the End of this Dissertation.

I think I am the first who made this Trial, and have no Reason to repent it, since all those who have followed this Process have been preserved from the Hydrophobia.

I am not ignorant that *Hippocrates* takes notice that Trials are dangerous. *Experimentum periculosum*; but in his Book *de Arte* he also admonishes us to look out for what has not been discovered, and to bring to Perfection the Labours of our Predecessors. *Eorum aliquid, quæ nondum inventa sunt invenire, imperfecta ad finem deducere, id mihi videtur illius esse munus, qui intelligens existimari expetit.*

He only condemns blind and rash Experience in this Aphorism, but approves at the same time in his Book *de vetere Medicina* Trials made under the Conduct of Reason; and that we should make use of Inferences drawn from Discoveries already made to find out what remains undiscovered. *In medicina via inventa est, reliqua invenientur, si quis probe comparatus ex inventorum cognitione ad ipsorum investigationem feratur.*

I have endeavoured to conform myself to this Precept, and here follow the Reasons which induced me to make this Essay.

1st, If

236 A DISSERTATION

1st, If the Cause of the *Rabies* consists in Insects, as I have said above, who doubts that Mercury, which is the grand Destroyer of Worms, the Poison of all Vermin, is not a sovereign Remedy in the Hydrophobia?

2^{dly}, If *Palmarius's* Powder composed of vermifuge Plants, is so great a Specific, both to prevent and to cure the *Rabies*, what ought we not to expect from Mercury which has a Virtue of destroying Vermin far superior to these Plants?

3^{dly}, But supposing the Cause of the *Rabies* doth not consist in Worms, and that the before quoted Authors have imposed upon us, at least it is without Dispute a contagious Distemper, and on account of the Uniformity of Nature of which we have spoke above, depends on the same Cause as the other contagious Distempers, and Nature employs the same Means and Artifice (whatever that be) to communicate the Infection in all Distempers of that Character, more or less.

If then we have a Remedy which cures several contagious Distempers, a specific, sovereign and infallible Remedy, we may boldly employ it for the Hydrophobia.

Now who will dispute that Mercury is not a sovereign Remedy for Crab-Lice, the Itch, Ulcers, Tetters, the King's Evil, the Venereal Disease, cutaneous Worms, &c. We may therefore conclude from a Parity of Reasoning, that it may be used for the *Rabies*, and it cannot

not be called Singularity or Rashness to advise the Use of Mercury to prevent or cure it.

4thly, When the Bark was brought into Europe, it was only used for quartan Fevers, as Sydenham says, *Pro febris quartanis primo cæpit inclarescere*. Analogical reasoning has induced Physicians to make use of it in other intermittent Fevers, and it has succeeded; in continual Fevers at the time of Remission, it is also given with Success, in Disorders free from Fever, returning periodically, and which are accompanied with red Urine, and a Sediment of the like Colour, it is also successful. Sydenham has also made use of it for Disorders of the Stomach, and for the Vapours. *Sed et in pluribus etiam Uteri et Ventriculi affectibus proficius deprehenditur* *. May we not also expect that a Remedy which all the World allows to be a sovereign Medicine in several contagious Distempers, shall conquer likewise the Hydrophobia, which is none of the least degrees of Infection?

5thly, If we take Mercury itself for an Example, we shall find a Reason which will incite us to adopt it as an excellent Remedy for the Rabies. When the Venereal Disorder came first to be known by the Name it bears now a-days, Mercury was not made use of as may

* It were to be wished that the Bark had not been employed with a view of its miraculous Operations, in inflammatory, slow, and symptomatic Fevers. We shall shew in the Dissertation upon Consumptions, that it is there as pernicious as it is sovereign in all intermittent Fevers.

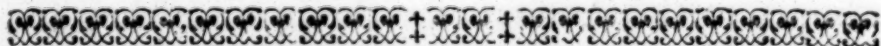
be seen in the first Authors that treated of it. The Patients were treated by forced Sweats, raised in a Cage, by the Assistance of sudorific Ptisans, composed of China-root, Guaiacum, Sarsaparilla, crude Antimony, Sassafras, the Skin quartering the Kernel of Walnuts, &c. When it came to be known, that Mercury cured the Itch, Ulcers, and many contagious Disorders, it was also employed in the Pox, which often is accompanied with Ulcers, and it succeeded. May we not expect a parallel Success in the *Rabies*?

6thly, The Sterility of the *Materia Medica* for the Hydrophobia, is a Reason why Mercury ought to take place, as an excellent Remedy for it; altho' it never had been made use of 'till this present time (at least I never read it, nor ever heard it mentioned :) What is more natural than to oppose so great a Remedy to so great a Disease? * Should this *Hercules* fit to subdue so many Evils, and like those Work-Tools which are employed in almost all Arts, lose its Credit and Reputation in the Hydrophobia only? The great and lasting Effects which it produces in so many other contagious Distempers, especially disguised or confirmed Poxes, are a certain Earnest of what it promises in the *Rabies*.

7thly, Lastly, The Remedy I propose is not unknown, or lately brought from *India*, it is a sovereign and efficacious Antidote, of

* *Extremis morbis extrema remedia adhibenda sunt, Hipp. Aph. 4. Sect. 1.*

great Reputation, and of infinite Credit in many contagious Diseases, imployed daily in other Complaints with Success, as we have shewn in the Treatise of the Venereal Disease, and the Use of which is now a-days easy and not hurtful, but capable of all the good Effects that may be expected from one Medicine only. *Instar Gladii Delphici pluribus malis accommodari potest quam quis ex uno remedio facile speraverit.* SYD. "Like the Delphic Sword, it hits more Distempers than could reasonably be expected from one Remedy."



The METHOD which I make use of to prevent the Rabies, and what I think proper to be done when it already appears.

WHEN a Person comes to me immediately after the Bite of a mad Creature, I send him to bathe in the Sea, altho' I have no Dependence upon its Efficacy, on account of the sad Examples we have seen of it this Year, as was said above. Nevertheless, as it is authorised by the Opinion of the Public, to omit it would be flying in the Face of a general Prejudice, and it is at least of some Advantage so far as it calms a little the Patient's Mind, who measures his Confidence by the great Number of Medicines he uses to secure himself; and the Bath abates in some degree the great Fear which worries him

I

Night

Night and Day. I have observed that their Apprehension increases as they come nearer the fortieth Day, like those Lawyers who never fear the Event of their Cause but in Proportion as they draw near the Day of Sentence.

Secondly, Immediately after his return I make him take *Palmarius's* Powder, to which I have added the *Corallina* an excellent Anthelmintic. We should be guilty of Ingratitude to our Predecessors in Physic if we neglected those Remedies which they have transmitted to Posterity. And if the Notions which I propose are just and true, we are much obliged to the Antients for them, since they are only Consequences drawn from their Observations, and the Success of their Medicines; and this which I propose has occur'd to me from the Analogy of their Precepts and Doctrine.

I therefore order one Dram of *Palmarius's* Powder in white Wine every Morning, and Persons of the fair Sex who cannot bear Wine, take it in a Draught of warm Water.

In this Method I continue 30 Days with those who have been bit in an uncovered Place, or have received some considerable Wound by the Bite; but to those who have been bit in a Place that was covered, and had only a few Holes made with the Teeth, I give the Powder only 20 Days: it has been observed above for what reason they are not in so great Danger.

Thirdly, From the first Day of using the Powder, I make them administer a Friction
of

of one or two Drams of the Ointment upon the Wound and neighbouring Part, and spread the Ointment all over the Part that was wounded.

The Friction is repeated every other Day in the beginning, and after the third time every third Day, after the 6th every fourth, till two or three Ounces of Ointment have been used; the Quantity of which ought to be proportioned to the Strength, Age, Temperament, Sex, the Bite, &c. .

But when the Patient comes to me several Days after the Bite, for fear of Accident and to prevent the *Rabies*, I order him to make the Frictions every Day to four or five times, and increase the Dose of the Powder; afterwards I leave a Day or two between, to avoid a Salivation which might ensue from the daily Use of the Ointment, altho' but a particular Friction.

I have often thought that if the Mercury should occasion some slight Ptyalism in this Case, it could not but produce a good Effect; for the Poison of the *Rabies* sticks to the Saliva, as above, and as Mercury naturally tends towards the Mouth, as daily Experience evinces, is it to be doubted that the Sovereign Antidote of so many contagious Poisons should not destroy also that of the Hydrophobia, which it runs as it were, like a Ferret, to attack in its Retrenchment?

Fourthly, I let the Patient apply all those trifling Remedies he is advised to, as wearing
R of

of Amulets about his Neck, &c. provided they don't weaken or destroy the Virtue of my Powder and Ointment; I infinitely approve Devotions and Vows, and am of Opinion, that his Prayers, those of his Friends, and of devout and pious Persons procure a happy Success to the Remedies; these Means serve at least to quiet the Patient's Mind, who stands in great Need of it.

Fifthly, I let him keep to his usual Meals, forbidding him all Excesses; for Experience proves that they increase all the other contagious Distempers. I let him drink Wine with Moderation, which has a Virtue of making People bold, and in this present Case it diminishes at least that terrible Fear, which torments them Night and Day. I take Care that they be not left alone, and desire their Relations and Friends to keep them Company, forbidding them to mention Madness to them, or mad Creatures: I have even advised some to the Concert in this Town, and they have owned to me that Musick suspended, at least as long as it lasted, their Horror and Sadness. (We shall explain the Effects of it in the Dissertation upon Consumptions.) But you may read a more circumstantial Account of this Method in the following Observations.

I. OBSERVATION.

A Gentlewoman of this City going to *Meudoc*, found upon the Road a little stray Dog, which run this way and that way, sitting afterwards down; his Tail was between his Legs, and his Tongue hung out of his Mouth. The Dog followed the Chariot she was in, with part of her Family; as soon as he saw some Shepherd's Dogs he was after them and made them run away, altho' much bigger than himself. Moreover he run into every House upon the Road and set upon the Dogs strong or weak, with a Superiority of Courage and Strength, which pleased the Lady, who thought she had been lucky in finding a good House Dog. Her Cow-herd came down to catch him, presenting him a piece of Meat he had left of his Breakfast; the Dog refuses it, but bites him in the Hand: he then judg'd him to be mad, told his Lady of it, and wanted to kill him. She who among many other fine Qualifications is of a humane Disposition, opposed the Cow-herd's Cruelty, and ordered him to let him follow her. The Dog was hardly come into the House but he bit one of her Children, and at that Instant herself also in the Hand above the little Finger, and held so fast, that notwithstanding she endeavoured to get loose her Hand, lifting the Dog up from the Ground, and shaking him with all her might, and altho' they struck him with great Sticks, he did not quit his Hold till the whole

Part he had seized was tore with his Teeth, which made a considerable Wound in her Hand.

They found too late that the Dog was mad, and then he was killed.

The Lady went to the Sea, altho' the Weather was pretty cold, after she had bathed she eat the Pancake, in which they had put calcined Oyfter-shells (a); but her Mind was not easy, terrified by the fatal and frequent Examples which were before her Eyes in her Country, she affects Solitude, her Sleep is interrupted by terrible Dreams, and her Mind is filled with unusual Ideas; and her Fear went so far, as to think herself upon the Brink of Madness; she often asked for Water, to try whether she had any Abhorrence for it.

I was sent for to visit her at *Meudoc*; altho' it was several Days after she had been bit, the Wound was not cicatrised, but appeared of a livid Colour.

I began with chearing up her Mind as much as possible, I represented to her the Infallibility of my Method, the Certainty of my Experiments, and that they never had been followed by any bad Consequences: *Cæteraque hujusmodi quibus ulceratæ mentes ad sanitatem revocantur*, "And such like which restore the wounded Mind to Health."

Altho' a Physician ought to be prudent in his Discourses and Promises, and tho' People

(a) This Remedy I found in my deceased Father's Writings.
look

look askew upon Praises, we bestow upon ourselves, there are nevertheless some Cases, says *Quintilian*, where it is allowed to boast a little, and bragging is never so excusable as when a Physician employs it to animate a Mind struck with Fear of Incurableness: *Quos nimia credulitas lædit, nimia etiam Credulitas juvat*, "Those who are hurt by Credulity, "are also to be help'd by it:"

The Roman *Hippocrates* exhorts Physicians to display their Eloquence to raise the Patient's Courage; he even allows us to feign and exaggerate the Virtues of Medicines.

Præcipua Medici Sagacitas et Solertia in dirigendo ægroto animi passionibus laborante eo potissimum spectare debet ut jacentem ejus animum quibusvis artibus extollere procuret, idque blandis eum leniendo colloquiis, vel gratis recreando medicamentis, fingendo quod talia remedia summopere valeant ad morbum illius unice eradicandum Cæterum in ægris curandis præstare maximopere debet Medicus, ut quæcunque remedia aut præcepta curationem spectantia ægroto proponit, ea tali arte et intrepida dicendi libertate proponat, ut illum ad patientiam et tranquillitatem componere et ad summam medicamentis præbendam fidem hortari valeat. Siquidem fieri vix possum quantum verba Medici dominantur in vitam ægrotantis, ejusque phantasiam transmutent. Medicus namque in Sermone potens et artium suadendi peritissimus, tantam vim dicendi facultate medicamentis suis adstruit et

246 A DISSERTATION

tantam doctrinæ suæ fidem in ægro excitat, ut interdum vel abjectissimis remedijs difficiles morbos superaverit, quod Medici doctiores, sed in dicendo languidi, molles, ac pæne emortui nobilioribus pharmacis præstare non poterunt.

“ The Physician’s chief Care and Industry
 “ in governing a Patient under some Disorder
 “ of Mind ought to tend principally to raise
 “ his Spirits by any Artifice, by pleasant Discourses, or agreeable Medicines, telling him
 “ that those Medicines are the only that are
 “ fit to root out his Distemper Moreover in performing the Cure, the Physician’s
 “ Aim ought to be, that whatever Medicines or Orders he proposes to the Patient
 “ concerning his Cure, he may do it with
 “ such Art and intrepid Freedom of Speech,
 “ as may render him patient and easy, and
 “ give him a great deal of Faith in his Medicines. For I can hardly express it how much
 “ Power the Physician’s Words have over the
 “ Patient’s Life, and how much they work
 “ upon his Fancy, for a Physician who is eloquent and has an Art of persuading, adds so
 “ great a Power to his Medicines by his Fluency of Speech, and raises so great a Faith
 “ in the Patient of his Understanding, that
 “ sometimes with the meanest Medicines he
 “ may perform great Cures, which more
 “ Learned Physicians, who are languid and
 “ faint in their Expressions, could not effect
 “ with the noblest Medicines.”

I made her take *Palmarius's* Powder, and rub the Wound and the Hand every Day with half a Dram of Ointment. I persuaded her to go Abroad, to see Company at Home and elsewhere, and to go to the Concert in this City; by this Means she is perfectly recovered of her Fright, secured from the Distemper, and enjoys a good State of Health.

It must nevertheless be observed, that after her Term was expired, she was fatigued with Head-ach and Vapours, which I attributed to the great Consternation she had been under. (a) *Sydenham* observes, that Grief and Sadness are the common Causes of Vapours; I cured her with Steel Medicines in a few Days.

REMARK I.

ALTHO' she went to the Sea in cold Weather, and bathed in it, she got no cold; it is observable that the Sea-Water is never so cold as fresh Water. I have been told by Sailors that they should not be able to handle the Rigging in Winter if that Water was as cold as our River Water. I have also observed that agitated at Night by Oars it becomes luminous like Phosphorus. I was upon the Sea Coast the 9th of Dec. 1730. in good Company, and had the Curiosity of touching the Water, which seemed not cold to me, altho' the Weather was severe.

(a) I inquire very carefully whether they are under any great Affliction of Mind, which if it is so, &c.

I attributed this Phænomenon to the Agitation of the Waves of the Sea, which by their beating the Particles of the Sea Salt against each other, raise this Heat, in the same Manner as when you file a piece of Silver, it grows so hot, that you cannot touch it. *Father Labbat* mentions a certain Wood which the Wild People at *St. Domingo* have, of which two pieces being rubbed against each other they grow hot and take Fire.

R E M A R K II.

THE Dog had the Signs of a mad Dog mentioned by *Mathiolus* and *Lommius*, he had also another not taken Notice of by them; *viz.* rambling about, for commonly a Dog keeps at his Master's House, except he follows him, and when you see one strolling up and down, that is a just Suspicion which may be joined with the other Signs; of this we have seen an Example in this City. A Sailor coming to *Bourdeaux*, saw a little Dog upon the Shore of *Agen*, which he thought pretty, he got out of his Boat to catch him, which he did; the Dog bit him, and he died mad in the Hospital of *St. Andre* of this City.

R E M A R K III.

I Applied only half a Dram of Oinment upon the Wound, for fear of raising a Ptyalism, for Mercury rubbed into Wounds penetrates more easily, than when it is to pass through the Skin to get into the Blood: (you may

may read in my Treatise upon the Venereal Disease some Observations on this Reflection.) After the Mercury had been applied three Days upon the Wound, it changed from a livid Colour into a red and florid one, and cicatrised presently.

R E M A R K IV.

MUSICK is not useless upon this Occasion, for it not only suspends Disquiet and Fear, but also produces a real Effect, which we have explained elsewhere. *Asclepiades* made use of it according to *Alexander ab Alexandro dierum genial. Lib. 6. Cap. 5. Asclepiadem nulla re magis quam Symphonia et vocum concentu, phreniticos, mente imminuta et valetudine animi effectos restituisse ad pristinam sanitatem,* " That *Asclepiades* restored to their " former Health, Persons that were Phrensical " whose Understanding was impaired, and who " laboured under Disorders of the Mind, by " Symphony and vocal Melody."

II. OBSERVATION.

A Mad Wolf went and attacked before Day two Dogs of one *Pey Dumeniu*, of the Parish of *Soussans* at *Meudoc*, the Farm belonging to *M. de Latour Demons*. He begins with killing the Dog, which was able to make the greatest Resistance; the Bitch was afterwards most cruelly tore, and almost put to Death. This Scene did not pass on without a great deal of Noise on the part of the Dogs.
Pey

Pey Dumeniu awakes, opens his Door in his Shirt, and runs to help his Dogs; the Wolf jumps upon him and bites him in both his Hands and his Arm. His Son, called *Coufiot*, also gets up in his Shirt, and runs to help his Father with a Rake in his Hand; the Wolf lets go his Hold, and falls upon the Son, whom he bites severely in the Arm; the Father in his Turn, altho' wounded, comes to succour his Son. The Wolf runs away and meets a Neighbour who was got up named *Jean Guiraud*, the Wolf also bites him in his Arm, making there or four considerable Openings besides several little ones: This last Man seiz'd the Wolf by one of his hind Legs, and made him quit his Hold. The Animal continues his Tour, and meets with a Shepherd of *Monf. Brethonneau*, called *Criq*, whom he bites. At last the Wolf was killed.

Here are four Men bit by the same Wolf, the same Day, and the same Hour, they all four go to the Sea, to bathe, and come back pretty well assured of their Cure.

Some Days after *Pey Dumeniu* feels a numb'd Pain about his Scars, which grew hard and rose like Imbroidery; he was very much affrighted, they comfort him, attributing it to the great Cold of the Winter 1731. however a little while after he is seized with all the Symptoms of Madness as well as *Criq*; they both died mad.

Domestick Examples strike and intimidate commonly more than strange ones. *Coufiot Dumeniu*

Dumeniu having seen his Father perish expects the same Fate, the rather since he begins to perceive Pain in his Cicatrices, and a Swelling with Hardness. *Jean Giraud* his Companion is in the same Case. Mon. *Joutard*, Merchant of *Castlenau*, a very honest Man, and my particular Friend, sends them to me without Delay. I examined their Cicatrices, and wondered that the Wolf's Teeth could have made such large Wounds, the Parts were hard and swelled, and I doubted not but Madness was near at Hand, if some Remedy was not applied immediately, the other two unfortunate Persons having died one or two Days before.

I made them presently rub in one Dram and a half of mercurial Ointment, which I made them spread upon the Cicatrices and about the whole Arm, which was repeated three Days successively. I thought the Case too pressing to allow of any Interval. After the three first Days I made them rub themselves every other Day, and after the fifth Friction I left two Days Interval, however they took every Day a Dram and an half of *Palmarius's* Powder.

These two Patients were perfectly cured and returned to the Plough. I had the Pleasure of seeing after the third Friction, the Cicatrices grow flat and soft, the Pain went off, their Courage returned, and their Minds resumed their natural Tranquillity in Proportion as they per-

252 A DISSERTATION

perceived the Accidents disappeared which had terrified them.

Can you wish for a more distinct Case to prove the Efficacy of Mercury to preserve Persons from Madness than this which I have here related ; four Men are bit the same Day, the same Hour, by the same Animal ; two of them die of Madness, the two others perceive the Symptoms which foreboded Madness to the others ; but Mercury secures them assisted by *Palmarius's* Powder. Truly if I had but this Observation only, it would deserve the Attention of a Practitioner.

R E M A R K I.

OLD *Dumeniu* was bit in both his Hands, in the Arm, and Thighs ; the Number of Wounds might accelerate his Madness ; besides they had been made in Parts not clothed, he being in his Shirt.

R E M A R K II.

IN the Consternation the two Patients who came to me were in, I omitted nothing to raise their Courage, I even gave them the Medicines gratis, as well as my Advice, to shew them by not being mercenary how confident I was of Success.

R E M A R K III.

THE Swelling, Pain, and Hardness of the Cicatrices foretold some Days before that Madness was coming on ; as in the Venereal Disease

Disease Buboës, for Example, and Cicatrices, which grow hard and swell, are manifest Signs of the Pox. But this is not the only Instance where it symbolises with the Hydrophobia. The Venereal Disorder is contracted by the Intromission of the Poison from one Body into the other ; so is the Hydrophobia. The Venereal Virus is some time before any of its Symptoms appear ; the same Scene passes in the *Rabies*. Authors observe, that the Venereal Distemper has sometimes lain many Years hid before it appeared, the like has been observed in the *Rabies*. (a) Every one who exposes himself to catch the Infection from Women, does not take it. *Non omnis fert omnia tellus* ; All Grains do not equally bear Fruit in all sorts of Grounds ; so likewise not all those who are bit by mad Dogs contract the Hydrophobia. All these Strokes of Resemblance between the Venereal Disorder and the Hydrophobia are as many incontestible Proofs of the Usefulness and Efficacy of Mercury in the *Rabies*.

III. OBSERVATION.

A Young *Hollander* lodging at Mr. *Guiraud's*, Merchant at *Chartrons*, was bit in his Nose by a little *Danish* Bitch, belonging to a young Woman in the Neighbourhood, which had been mad two Days. The Woman dismay'd at the Fear of losing her, wanted to make much of her, and always carried her in her

(a) Read *Sennertus*, and *Etmuller De Rabie*.

Arms, not thinking her mad. The *Hollander* wanted to caress the Creature, she bit him in his Nose, then jumps on the Ground, runs mad and is kill'd.

The *Hollander* being a good Catholic went to make his Devotions at St. *Peter's* of *Bruges*, was touch'd with the Key, made them say a Mass, and thought himself secure; however he died of the *Hydrophobia*.

Four Days before his Death he ran about the Streets at *Chartrons*, went to see his best Friends, complaining every where of a great Fire he had in his Throat, and of a violent Heat in his Stomach every time he swallowed his Spittle: The next Day he took to his Bed, during the three Days he was ill a Bed, his Surgeon blooded him three times in his Arm and Foot, without suspecting any thing of the *Rabies*; he fell into Convulsions perfectly like *Epileptick*, with Froth about his Mouth, he trembled and shaked when any Ptisane or Broth was presented him, his Convulsions became both stronger and more frequent in proportion as he came nearer to his Death.

I was called two Hours before he expired; I found him convulsed all over, which finished his Life soon after, his Eyes and Face were red; he had a frothy Spittle like that of *Epilepticks*. I immediately asked whether he had not been bit by some Dog; they said yes, but that was out of Question, since he had cleared that Suspicion by a Devotion he had performed at *Bruges*.

I said

I said the Patient was mad, and that God did not always hear our Prayers for the Reasons above mentioned. Immediately a crowd of Neighbours who were in the Room disappeared, even to the Surgeon's Man, and the Nurse, who run towards the Door. I told them they ought not to be more frightened than myself, that our Business was to assist the Patient, that our Condition required of us to be above the Vulgar, &c. I made the Surgeon's Man and the Nurse stay in the Room, and we ty'd the Patient's Hands and Feet to the Bed-posts.

I can affirm it for Truth, that neither this nor any other Patient that I have seen under these Circumstances have ever attempted to bite any Body. The Nurse wiped away the Spit-
tle that came from his Mouth, I gave her a Caution to take care of it. I have not heard that among the great Number of those who have died mad this Year, any one has bit or attempted to bite. Neither have I seen or observed that mad Persons imitate the Actions or Cries of the Animals by which they have been bit: Wherefore I reckon that the Pains some take to explain these Phænomena in their Dissertations, who perhaps never saw such a Distemper, are useless and foreign to the Purpose.

I had formed a Design first to inject a great Quantity of warm Water by way of Clyster. 2dly, To have him rubbed with Mercurial Ointment from Head to Foot, but Death which happened two Hours after my Visit,
and

and four Days after the Hydrophobia appeared, did not permit me to attempt either the one or the other.

R E M A R K I.

ALTHO' I never have treated a Patient with the *Rabies* upon him, I declare nevertheless, that if one was to come under my Care who was actually seized with the fear of Water, I would put in Execution the Plan which I had formed for this unhappy Person, and for the following Reasons, *viz.*

First, It is impossible for these sort of Patients to drink at a Time when they want it very much, what Precaution soever be taken to make them swallow Liquids, as *Lister* relates *ægror.* 1. Clysters give not so much Disturbance to the Patient as Drink, the Proof of which you may see in that Author at the Place here quoted, and the Reason of it is plain, according to the Principles which we have established. I have made use of Water Clysters with Success in malignant Fevers, when the Patients could not possibly drink, on account of their Delirium and great Dryness of the Tongue and Throat. And since we have made it appear in the Article of analogical Reasoning that Food may be administered by Clysters, and we may give the Patient in a manner of speaking to eat, much more is it easy to give him Drink.

2dly, A general Friction, such as I proposed, is capable of curing a declared *Rabies*.

Let

Let us examine the prodigious Effects of Mercury ; if a Person is covered with Crab-lice and Lice, a slight Application of two Drams of Mercury kill'd with Spittle, immediately destroys all the Vermin. *Furettiere* in his Dictionary Letter *M*. If Worms in the Intestines occasion Delirium, Convulsions, and Fits like Apoplectick, one Dram of crude Mercury swallowed calms all these Symptoms, according to *Nicholas Chemau*, Physician of St. Sever, *Namerit instar mirandi*, "for it will be like unto a Miracle." Is there a Gonorrhœa with a Cordee, so that Prisans with Nymphæa and Linseeds, Emulsions and Syrup of Poppies are not able to calm the Pain and Heat of Urine, one, two, or three Frictions at most of two Drams of the mercurial Ointment, upon the Parts of Generation, remove the Complaint. Have you a Mind to see a very surprising Effect in a Pox under Disguise, which seizes the Head, the Nerves, and appears under the Shape of different Diseases; one general Friction well applied discovers this Protheus by its capital and sudden Relief. I flatter my self that Practitioners who are to handle Mercury, and see its wonderful Effects, will think favourably of the Design I have to make use of it upon this Occasion. *Sola remedia sanant et ubicunque scientiæ substituerit infirmitas, sola remedia pondus et majestatem ejusdem restituent*, Bagl. *Prax. med.* "Medicines only heal, and where Knowledge is wanting, Medicines only replace its Weight and Dignity. *Bagl. Prax. Med.*"

S

3. What

268 A DISSERTATION

3dly, What Risk do we run by this Trial in a Patient who is given over: *Satius est remedium anceps experiri quam ægotantem certo exitio relinquere.* Cels. "It is better to try a desperate Remedy, than relinquish the Patient to certain Ruin." This Experiment is a thousand times preferable to the cruel Practice of stifling the Patient, as *Palmarius* says was practised; *Strangulatu et vitæ et morbo vulgus finem imponit*, or to take away from them all the Blood, as *Clement* * says he saw practised.

I don't think any Critick can be so splenetic as not to prefer a Method founded upon Reason, Analogy, and the Success of the Medicines, to the melancholy Situation of a Physician, who sees his Patient expire with his Arms a-cross, *Quamdiu anima in corpore remanet, semper aliquid ex admirabili nostra arte sperandum.* Bagl. prax. med. "Whilst there is Life something may be expected from our admirable Art.

* *Vidi octo hydrophobos. . . . accidit autem quid notabile uni ex his in oppido sancti Montani, cui ex jussu pedibus et manibus ligatis missus fuit sanguis ex basilica dextra, et extractus una et eadem vice ad viginti fere libras et quod mirum erat post inauditam illam evacuationem simultaneam pulsu et viribus constantibus sanguis adhuc ad duos palmos lecti pedes transiliret, Observat. 20. t. 5.* "I have seen 8 in the Hydrophobia. . . . to one of which there happened something very extraordinary in the Town of St. Montanus, from whom, his Hands and Legs being tied, they took by Prescription, out of his right Basilica at one time almost 20 Pound of Blood, and what is wonderful, after that unheard of Evacuation, the Pulse and Strength still subsisting, the Blood yet jump'd two Spans beyond the Bed's Feet.

RE.

R E M A R K II.

A Dog, altho' mad, seldom bites his Master, or Mistress, in the Delirium which accompanies his Madness; the Traces of Love and Respect for them are so deeply imprinted in this Instinct, or something like it, that nothing almost is capable of effacing it. Thus the Bitch here mentioned, altho' mad, was 3 Days in her Mistress's Arms, and never offered to bite her.

IV. OBSERVATION.

A Man of Fashion was bit in his Leg by a Cat; this Animal, tho' much beloved by her Master, who fed her himself at every Meal, nevertheless, gave him a terrible Wound; She made 14 Openings at once, viz. 4 with her fore Teeth, and 5 on the right, and 5 on the left Side with her Claws.

The Question was to know whether the Cat was mad or not, the Reasons that she was were,

1st, The Cat had been in the Country with her Master; a Bitch belonging to the House had been bit by a mad Dog, and notwithstanding all the Remedies that could be made use of she went mad within 40 Days: The Cat, 40 Days after the Bitch's Death, with which she had played every Day, fell a biting, and attack'd not only her Master, but also bit a Maid-servant in her Hand.

2dly, Great Consequences were drawn from hence, that this Creature who loved her Master as much as is in the Nature of these Animals to do, had committed this perfidious Action : Besides, her wild Look, and the great Number of mad Creatures that Year increased the Suspicion.

On the other hand, the Accident might be attributed to the Perfidiousness of these Creatures, without any Concurrence of Madness (no Cat but scratches sometimes her Master, says the Proverb) besides, if she had been mad she would not have let go the Moment she had bit ; of which we have seen an Example in a Cat which bit a Peasant of *Bruges*, and would not quit her hold 'till she was kill'd: the Peasant died mad. Lastly, as a third Reason, I opened the Carcase of this Cat in the medicinal Garden of Brother *Luc*, Apothecary at the *Recolets* of this City, my particular Friend, and in his Presence, we found no Worms either in the Brain or the salival Glands, altho' we look'd for them with a Microscope. Altho', I was well persuaded that this Cat had not been mad, grounded chiefly upon my not finding any Worms, nevertheless, upon this occasion, I thought it best to look upon things in the worst Light, since there was no Danger in the Precautions with regard to the Gentleman; and I put him, as also the Servant, under my Method, and never any Accident happened to them. I should never have forgiven myself, if through too much Security I had lost a Man

of that Consequence, who during 26 Years honoured me with his Benevolence and Protection. These Remedies at least served to make his Mind easy.

I designed not to swell this Dissertation by a great Number of Observations, and to follow the Example of *Sydenham*, who related only a small Number of them at the End of every Method, to serve as a Model, as he says in his Preface. " I do it not, says he, to enlarge the following Treatise with a great Number of particular Observations, whereby I may give a Reputation to the Method here delivered. For it would be to no purpose and fulsome to repeat those Things singly which have been treated of together. I count it sufficient at the End of every general Observation, to add here and there a particular Observation, wherein the Substance of the preceding Method is contained.

End of the Dissertation on the Hydrophobia.

Magnam artis partem esse arbitror de his, quæ recte scripta sunt posse considerationem facere et judicare, qui enim hoc novit et his utitur, non videtur mihi in Arte multum falli posse.
Hippoc. de diebus indicat. n. 1.

DISSERTATION

UPON

CONSUMPTIONS.



THE Multitude of Persons that I have seen die of Consumptions, of the Number of which were my Brother a Clergyman, my Sister, a *Carmelite* Nun of the Convent of St. *Joseph* of *Bordeaux*, and several People of both Sexes whom I honour'd and respected, has engaged me to study this Distemper with Application; to contemplate it, and to enquire into its Cause in order to find out a Remedy for it, by constant Labour, both by reading of Books that have treated of it, and opening the Bodies of such as had died of it, and lastly by Meditation and Reflection.

During

During 35 Years that I have followed my Profession, I have not been well pleased with my first Essays, nor with the Ideas with which Consumptions are look'd upon, nor the Remedies that are prescribed for them.

The unhappy Success of our Practice in this sort of Distempers has made me believe that we ought to change our System and Remedies, to view at least the Disorder from that Side where it may receive a Cure.

It would be shameful for Physicians, like Children who follow a beaten Road, to see so many fine young Persons of both Sexes perish, without trying any other Method but that which brings them to the Grave.

Is the Power of Medicine so confined, that in so many Ages, no sure Method could have been found out to help Nature in a Disorder where she alone disputes the Ground, and seems willing to give the Physician time to succour her by his Reflections and Remedies?

I dare not flatter my self, that the Treatise which I have compiled upon this Disorder of which I give an Abstract in this Dissertation, will obtain the Approbation of the Publick.

A System which overthrows the Prejudices of so many Ages, Notions diametrically opposite to so many grave Authors who have wrote on this Subject, cannot be look'd upon but with a jealous Eye.

The Physicians, for Example, both Ancient and Modern, excepting *Willis*, have believed unanimously, that the Cause of Consumptions

274 A DISSERTATION

was an Ulcer in the Lungs, insomuch that they have made it the proper Characteristick of this Malady, and place it in its Definition, *Phthisis est corporis contabescencia et consumptio ab ulcere in pulmonibus oriunda*, "A Phthisis is " a wasting of the Body, and Consumption " proceeding from an Ulcer in the Lungs." That the antecedent Cause was sharp and corrosive Humours, &c.

To pretend now to prove from Demonstration that the Ulcer of the Lungs is not the Cause of Consumption, but a Symptom, and that its antecedent Causes are acid and coagulating Juices, and not sharp and corrosive ones; is this not picking up an ungrateful Quarrel?

To propose a sure Method to cure Consumptions is like boasting of the Discovery of the Longitude in Navigation, of the grand Process in Alchymistry, and of other things of the like Kind, which have been looked for a long time without Success.

Nevertheless as Truth wants only to be proposed, the Clearness, which is its Portion being its Proof, I hope the Connoisseurs who shall read my Dissertation will approve it. At all Events consumptive People ought to be beholden to me for my Endeavours of proposing a certain Cure in a Distemper which passes for incurable.

If I prove that Men are mistaken in the Cause of Consumptions, that they have taken the Cause for the Effect, the Symptom for the Distemper,

Distemper, doth it not follow from a natural Consequence, that the Indication and the Remedy ought to be changed?

You will see that I make use of no Supposition in my System, I build upon Fact and Observations, which Authors themselves who are not of my Opinion, have made at the opening of consumptive Bodies. *Ne quid a nobis fictum videatur, sed ab ipsis adversariis proferatur.* St. Augustin, "That it may not appear to be invented by us, but advanced by the Adversaries themselves." My Notions are deduced from the Structure of the Lungs, and their Use, from Facts which I have observed at the opening of dead Bodies, agreeing with those of other Authors, and the Remedies I propose, in consequence of my System, are authorised by Success, of which I produce living Witnesses who have been cured by them.

I only propose my Thoughts, and to be concise in this Dissertation, I shall relate only so many Observations as may serve for a Proof.

I reduce my whole Dissertation to two Propositions, the first upon the Cause of Consumptions, and the second upon the Remedy to be applied to it.

FIRST PROPOSITION.

BEFORE I declare the Cause of Consumptions, I thought proper to give a Description of them in behalf of such as are
not

276 A DISSERTATION

not of the Profession, who may read this Dissertation (if any will do me that Honour) I shall imitate as much as possible the Simplicity and Exactness of *Cælius Aurelianus*, in the Description of the Diseases he treats of, and the Cause which I substitute may receive some Explanation therefrom.

I mention beforehand, that I don't speak here of the symptomatical Consumption, which depends on other Complaints, and which is cured in Proportion as they are removed; but I describe that principal and famous Consumption, which carries off so many Persons of both Sexes, and which the Vulgar think proceeds from the Lungs. Of the other we shall speak hereafter.

Consumption attacks Youth sooner than other Ages; that is, from 18 till the 35th Year it makes its principal Havock. *Tabes præcipue contingit ætatibus quæ sunt ab anno 18 ad 35.* Hipp. Aph. 9. Sect. 5. Not that the other Ages are exempted from it, since we see consumptive People under and above the time set down in the Aphorism; but not so often.

1.) Those who have a narrow Chest, a long Neck, high Shoulders like Birds Wings, are most subject to it, and 'tis of those that Hipp. speaks in his first Book of Epidemics: *Quorum natura ad Tabem comparata est.*

2.) Those who have the Misfortune of being born of consumptive Parents are very subject to it; for this Distemper has this in common

mon with many others, that it is propagated by Inheritance.

Sic Patrum in natos veniunt cum semine morbi.

“ Thus the Diseases of Parents are propagated upon their Children with the Seed.”

3.) Such as are obliged to live with consumptive People, to wait on them, may contract it, if they are any ways inclined to it; for it is contagious as we shew in the Sequel. Thus Women who attend their consumptive Husbands catch it of them, and Husbands of their Wives.

The Disorder manifests itself, and makes its Progress in the following Manner. The Patient seems to have a cold, he is seized with a dry Cough, which fatigues him most at Night. Afterwards he brings up well digested Flegm, of a sweet Taste; People are never at a Loss to find a Cause for this Rheum. Sometimes it is the sitting up a Night, or some sudden Cold; drinking of Liquors cooled with Ice, a Shower of Rain upon the Road, &c. The Family Surgeon is sent for, he bleeds the Patient once or twice, he orders a pectoral Drink, made of Jujubs, Sebestans, Figs, Raisins, Mashmallows, Syrup of Maiden-hair, Colts-foot, red Poppies, &c.

This State does not surprise the Patient; he has had Colds formerly, they are gone off
after

278 *A* DISSERTATION

after a due Expectoration, he hopes this will do the same.

Nevertheless as this Cough continues, as it exceeds the Bounds of a common Cold, as it goes daily increasing, as the Patient's Legs are observed to waste, and the rest of the Body in Proportion, as his Colour changes and he grows pale and yellow, as the Flegm changes Taste and becomes a little bitterish, as some small Quantity of Blood is mixed with it, as a slow Fever associates with it, with a Pain in the Breast, and in short when he is at the Brink of the second Stage he is frightened and very much alarmed, especially if he has seen his Parents die consumptive; for Domestick Examples commonly make a stronger Impression than others.

Besides these Symptoms which Authors have taken Notice of, and which establish the first Degree, I have always found a considerable Disorder in the Liver, so that an Obstruction in this Bowel, plainly appeared from its Hardness, and sometimes a great Pain. I am surprised to see that Authors have not taken Notice of this, which however is a Symptom deserving of great Attention, since it is of great Importance for the Discovery of the Cause of Consumptions, and of the Agreeableness of the Remedy which I have to propose.

I formerly thought that the Hardness of the Liver in this Degree of Consumptions, caused the Cough. As this Bowel is fastened to the Diaphragm, and increases in Weight by the Ob-

Obstruction; I imagined that by that Means it pulled and confined the Motion of the Diaphragm, and thus caused the Cough; but I have since found out my Error.

In this Situation People cheer up and comfort the Patient, they endeavour to calm his Fear, and make him think that his Complaint is no Consumption: They represent to him the Difference there is between this tough Flegm he spits and the Pus that comes from an Ulcer which is the Characteristic of this Malady. He is made to believe, that they are going to calm his Fever, and to help afterwards his Leanness by the help of Asses Milk.

To this End, after the general Remedies, if they are indicated, they give him the Bark to stop the Fever; it doth not take Effect, then they mix with it Crabs Eyes, red Coral, Os Sepiæ, Antihecticum Poterii, Balsam of Peru, Magisterium Perlarum, &c. made up into precious Electuaries, and order him to drink after it Whey, Broth of Cray-fish, Frogs, Tortoises, Snails, &c. other Drinks are made of Bugle, Calf's Lungs, Ground Ivy, the great Comfrey, &c. Narcoticks are ordered, inspissating Syrups, of which are composed Magisteriums, Balsams, Powders, Troches, &c. tending to sweeten the Acrimony which supplies the pretended Ulcer of the Lungs; but all in vain.

Notwithstanding all these Remedies, Secrets, and other specificks, the Patient grows worse, and comes to the second Stage, which makes itself known by the Cough being stronger and
more

more frequent, by Night Sweats which fatigue and drain the Patient, by the Quantity of Blood in his Spitting, and lastly he comes to spit Matter.

The Leanness to which he was reduced by the first Degree increases considerably in the second, the Fever is stronger and more violent, he has even some Returns with Cold, which encourages his taking the Bark regularly, to stop at least the Returns complicated with the slow Fever, and to continue the Medicines to heal the Ulcer, the Existence of which is no more to be doubted. His Nails grow crooked, and the Distemper becomes contagious in this Stage, for the Reasons which shall be mentioned hereafter.

Let us observe that it is not always necessary the Patient should spit Blood to die consumptive, as has been often remark'd, and of which we shall relate some Observations from good Authors, collected in the Presence of some Witnesses worthy of Credit. It is even not necessary for the Patient to spit Pus to determine the Existence of a Consumption, as I shall also prove by Observations made at the opening of consumptive Bodies. The Cough, the spitting of certain Flegm without Blood or Pus, the wasting, the nocturnal Sweats, and lastly a Diarrhoea put an End to Life, it not being essential to this Distemper to spit Blood or Pus.

The Patient at last comes to the third Stage, his Leanness is at the last Period, he resembles

a Skeleton covered with a human Skin, which is hard, wrinkled and rough ; his Breath smells strong, and what he expectorates stinks so that he loaths it, he brings up almost pure Matter, and his Life terminates with a Loosness. *Sputum in ore contentum excreaturus detestatur, pus magis sincerum expuit hunc intra breve tempus perituum asserito et ex alvi profluvio perituum.* Hipp. lib. 2. de morbis.

The Patient who from the first to the second Stage had been very uneasy, takes Courage almost of his own accord, in proportion as he comes near his End; he is no more frightened, he explains every thing to his Advantage, and as he has some Days of Remission for the Reasons that shall be mentioned hereafter, he lays hold of these faint Glimmerings to build his Hopes upon, he even forms Projects beyond his Recovery, but this faithless and suspicious Truce, which imposes sometimes upon the Physician himself, who attributes it improperly to the Effect of his Remedies, is not of long Duration. *Quæ cum pravis signis mitescunt perniciosæ.* Hipp. in Coacis. "Whatever grows favourable with " bad Signs, is pernicious."

The Patients who do not understand Physick, are not the only Persons that are deceived by this Delusion. I have seen even Physicians ready to expire of this Distemper, who thought themselves not consumptive, and who had made use of the Rules of their Art, to deceive themselves. The late Dr. Fartas, Professor of Physick

Physick of the University of *Bordeaux*, whose Disciple I am proud to have been, has told me, that he had heard say the late Dr. *de Lachaise*, a famous Physician of this Country, has made the same Observation. So true it is that the Love of Life seduces us, and persuades us easily to what we desire with Earnestness.

Let us now speak of the Causes of Consumption; we shall divide them into concomitant and antecedent. The Definition of the concomitant Cause is in the Elements of Physick said to be the Cause, the Presence whereof makes the Distemper, and the Destruction thereof the Cure. *Causa qua posita ponitur morbus, qua sublata, tollitur.* This concomitant Cause of Consumption I say consists in Tubercles and Concretions formed in the Substance of the Lungs, and which are spread through its Lobes. These Concretions are like Hailstones, and of different Dimensions.

These Tubercles in the Lungs are real, and fall under the Cognizance of the Senses, and are no Suppositions invented by a System-monger, to explain the easier his Hypothesis. *Lusciosi nos ac hebetes lynceis accuratiora relinquimus, eo tenus sapere contenti, quousque sensus rationi operam præstiteret,* Willis de ferment.
 “ We purblind ones leave all Niceties to the
 “ long-sighted, contented to penetrate only
 “ so far as our Senses are assistant to Reason.”

That great Observator *Hippocrates* speaks of it in his Book *de Morbis*, he makes them of

two sorts: Some Crude, which do not come to Suppuration, and others which suppurate and leave an Ulcer. The Tent is mentioned by *Riverius* of *Montpelier*, in his Chapter of Consumption.

Sennertus who has compiled the Opinions of the Antients, as *Etmuller* those of the Moderns, has a whole Chapter *de Tuberculis pulmonis*, L. 2. Part 2. C. 8. p. 436.

Read *Morton's* Book upon Consumptions. He never opened a consumptive Body where he did not find them; he mentions them almost in every Passage; he imputes to them all the Disorder, and thinks they are the Source of all the Symptoms of Consumption, so that I need almost to do nothing else but to translate and copy him.

Bonnetus in his practical Anatomy, L. 2. Sect. 7. proposes several Observations collected from Dissections of Bodies, where the Tubercles have been deemed the true Cause of Consumptions, and the Pus and Ulcers only as the Consequences of these same Tubercles suppurated and degenerated into Ulcers.

But why shall we look for Proofs in Antiquity, why employ the Evidence of Foreigners? I appeal to all our Surgeons who have opened consumptive Carcasses, and to the Physicians who have assisted thereat: Have they not regularly found in all these Tubercles, tho' less in Quantity in those who died of a long Consumption, they having had time to melt away and be consumed by Ulceration?

T

Some

Some however have always remained, Death having prevented their Suppuration. They are found in greater Number in consumptive Persons whom an epidemical Distemper surprizes and carries away, as a Dysentery, Fever, Small-Pox, &c. because there has not been time for them to suppurate. You may see a Proof of what I here advance in the Observation of Morton, p. 151 and 152. *Vetula quædam &c. pulmones vero ipsos nullibi exulceratos; tuberculis autem crudis et calculis cretaceis ubique fere obsessos vidimus, quibus de causa tussis, anhelitus, atque aliarum affectionum pulmonarium vel ipsis oculis constabat. Nullus tamen dubito quin progressu temporis, tubercula ista maturari potuissent, atque eo pacto incipiens hæc phthisis in confirmatam et deploratam facessere, nisi mors præmatura ab aliis causis accersita eam rem prævenisset.* “An old Woman, &c. the Lungs were
 “not ulcerated, but full of crude Tubercles
 “and Chalk Stones, from whence the Cause
 “of the Cough, of the Difficulty of Breathing, and other Disorders of the Lungs appeared plain to the Eye. However, I don’t
 “in the least doubt these Tubercles might
 “have been brought to Ripeness, and by this
 “Means the Consumption would have been
 “confirmed, if a too early Death from another Cause had not prevented it.”

This being allowed to be the Cause of a Consumption, it will be easy to explain all its Symptoms, which we shall follow step by step.

I have sometimes compared the Cause of the Distemper to the Word of a Riddle, when that is found out all the Thoughts of the enigmatical Poem square and agree with it naturally, without any Necessity of putting a forced Construction upon them. Thus also when the true Cause of a Distemper is discovered, and the Secret of Nature is unlocked, the Explanation of all the Symptoms and of the Effects of the Medicine are easy, and things almost explain themselves.

The dry Cough in the beginning comes from the Pressure of the Tubercles upon the Ramifications of the Aspera Arteria, dispersed through the Substance of the Lungs. *Ita etiam a tuberculis hinc inde per pulmonum parenchyma dispersis in tussim sollicitatur. Mort. p. 35.*

The same Irritations which this Compression makes in the Aspera Arteria, squeeze at length a Flegm out of the Glands, spread about the internal Membrane of the Trachea, and the Cough which in the beginning was dry and hard, becomes moist, and throws up the Matter press'd out of the Glands by the Strength of the Cough. *Glandulosa ipsius tracheæ ejusque ramulorum tunica, ab hac diuturna agitatione, specie tussis aridæ, à tuberculis hinc inde per totum parenchyma dispersis irritata, continuo quasi emulgetur, indeque copiosum serum quotidie effundit, eodem fere modo quo lac e Mammis et Saliva e ductibus Salivalibus continua fere tractatione eliciuntur. Mort. p. 34.*

Two Signs make us distinguish a consumptive Cough from that proceeding from a Catarrh; this is moist from the beginning and brings up Flegm; the other is dry and hard from its first Appearance as has been observed. The Catarrhus Cough ceases after some Weeks or Months, the other goes on increasing. *Mort. p. 35.*

The Difficulty of Breathing comes from these Tubercles which fill up part of the Lungs, and lessen in Proportion the Quantity of Air which used to enter there; beside the Compression they make upon the Ramifications of the Aspera Arteria renders its Admission more difficult.

The Leanness and Wasting are the Effects of these Tubercles, and to conceive more clearly how that is produced I advance the following Reflections.

1.) Nature affects to circulate the Blood through the Lungs, like a second Heart: Every Antaomist is persuaded by this Reflection that Nature has had a Design to reap some great Advantage from it, without which she would never have ventured to pass the whole Mass of Blood through a flabby and soft Part, which otherwise has proper Arteries for its own Nourishment.

2.) The Benefit which the Blood receives from passing through the Lungs appears from the Change of Colour it receives there. According to the Experiments of *Lower* and *Varreyen*, the brown and dark red Colour of the

the Blood before it enters the Lungs, is after its Passage changed into a brisk and bright red. Doth not this Alteration of Colour prove that it has received some Character and some considerable Perfection?

3. Without entering into the Disputes of Anatomists about the Cause which works this Change, whether it is the Air or some other Reason, it is enough for us that they agree about the Fact. For my own Part, I am fully of the Opinion which I heard Mon. *Duverney* propose in his anatomical Lectures 1698. that the Blood being forced by the Elasticity of the Air through the Labyrinths of the *Vesiculæ pulmonales*, and bruised and reduced to an impalpable Powder in the Vessels of the capillary Ramifications, it is this Comminution which renders it red and of a bright Colour, and proper for the Nourishment of the Body.

This being supposed, it is easy to conceive that from the time the Lungs are out of Order, stuffed with a great Number of Tubercles, not having any more that Liberty of Play, to confer upon the Blood the Benefit for which they were designed; and for want of that Perfection which the Blood used to receive there, not being sufficiently bruised and attenuated, it is no more fit to repair the Loss which the Parts sustain daily, and consequently the Body grows lean and wastes away.

This is the true Cause of Leanness, and not the Ulcer of the Lungs, as has been supposed; and as it is of the greatest Importance

288 A DISSERTATION

for the Indication which should be pursued in this Distemper, to prove that the Ulcer is not the Cause of the Wastings, we shall insert here the following Proofs.

1.) *Hipp.* in his first Book of *Epid.* acknowledges a Consumption without an Ulcer of the Lungs. *Ægrotabant macilenti citra pulmonum ulcus*, "They were sick and wasted without an Ulcer of the Lungs.

2.) *Hippocr.* has also observed that Leanness has begun before the rise of the Ulcer, and that it is even far gone when the Ulcer appears; let us view the Passages themselves. *Cum quis pulmonum vitio contabescit huic sputum crassum aliquantulum et dulce per tussim rejicitur ... primum quidem ut plurimum latenter pituita defluit et tussim tenuem exhibet et sputum paulo amarius solito et aliquando tenuis adest calor...* *Temporis autem progressu exasperatur pulmo, et intus ulceratur a pituita inbærente et putrescente, et gravitatem exhibet pectori et dolorem acutum, ante et retro caloresque acutiores in corpus incidunt.*

It appears from these Passages of *Hippocrates*, and especially the last, that the Wasting, Cough, Spitting, and slow Fever have begun before the Ulcer comes on. *Temporis autem progressu exulceratur Pulmo.* It is only in the Course of the Distemper; *temporis progressu*, says he, in progress of time.

And in Reality the Consumption has begun and is far advanced when the Ulcer comes into play; the Date of which cannot be traced farther

ther

ther back than to the Patient's spitting of Pus.

Who will then believe that Leanness which has begun before the Ulcer is the Effect of this same Ulcer? *Causam causato dicimus esse prius*, "The Cause is before its Effect." And as in malignant Fevers, the Delirium and Convulsions which come in the Increase and State of the Distemper, cannot be looked upon as the Cause of these same Fevers, but as their Effects and Symptoms: So likewise the Ulcer of the Lungs, which happens in the Progress of the Consumption, cannot be deemed the Cause of this same Consumption; it is even more natural to think that the Cause of the Leanness, which we have established, continues perpetually to waste the Patient more and more to the last degree of Decay.

3.) Lastly, we prove by an invincible Reason that the Ulcer of the Lungs is not the Cause of Consumption. There have been Persons who died of a Consumption with the whole Train of Symptoms, yet during the Course of the Distemper never spit any Pus; and upon the opening of their Bodies no Ulcers were found in the Lungs, but Tubercles in great Number: These same Tubercles then ought to be look'd upon as the only Cause of Consumption, since they caused it without the Assistance of an Ulcer. For Proof of this Fact we shall introduce the Observations upon the Body of the late Mr. *Clever*, Merchant of this City, and of a young Gentlewoman Also.

Willis's Observations, which I ought to have quoted before mine. This Author explains himself in these Words. *Pharmaceut. Rat.* Part. 2. Sect. 1. Cap. 6.

Phthisis definiri solet quod sit totius Corporis intabescencia ab ulcere pulmonis orta, verum minus recte, quia plurimum ab hoc morbo defunctorum Cadavera aperui, in quibus Pulmones ab ulcere quovis immunes, tuberculis aut lapidibus, aut materia sabulosa per totum obfiti fuerunt...

Quapropter phthisis definitur melius quod sit totius contabescencia corporis a mala pulmonis conformatione orta. "Consumption is commonly defined to be a wasting of the whole Body arising from an Ulcer of the Lungs, but not justly, because I have opened the Bodies of several who died of this Distemper, whose Lungs I found without Ulcers, but full of Tubercles, and Stones and sabulous Matter Wherefore a Consumption is better defined to be a wasting of the whole Body from a bad Conformation of the Lungs."

You may also read on this Head an anonymous Book, intitled, *Riverius reformatus*, Cap. de Phthisi.

But let us a little compare Consumption with the King's Evil, they both are chronical Distempers; the King's Evil begins with Swelling in the Neck and in the Mesentery, a Consumption also begins with Tumours in the Lungs. The Swellings in the King's Evil come to an Inflammation and suppurate, a slow Fever

Fever associates with it, which doth not give way to the force of the Bark; the like happens in the Lungs of consumptive Persons. After the Suppuration of scrophulous Tumours there remain Ulcers difficult to cure, and rebellious, and which cannot be conquered, but by destroying the Tumours, and the Cause that produced them; this is likewise the Case of phthifical Ulcers. Lastly, both Distempers in this Stage are contagious.

We shall have an Oportunity in the second Proposition of this Dissertation to pursue this Comparison further, when we come to propose the proper Remedies to effect a Cure.

But to resume the Thread of our Discourse, as the Ulcers which succeed after the Suppuration of the scrophulous Tumours are not the Cause of the King's Evil, but the Effects and Progress thereof; so likewise the Ulcers which follow the Inflammation and Suppuration of the Tubercles of the Lungs are not the Cause of a Consumption, but the Effects and Symptoms of it.

The Reader will pardon me if I briefly recapitulate the Proofs, that the Ulcer of the Lungs is not the Cause of a Consumption, which often begins and is far advanced before the Ulcer appears. The Consumption has often been found compleat and perfect without any Ulcer in the Lungs, and Death has happened without any Ulcer. *Hippocr.* acknowledges Consumptions without an Ulcer: *Macilentia citra pulmonum ulcus.* Some Authors since

292 A DISSERTATION

since *Hippocrates* mention this likewise, therefore the Ulcer is not the Cause of a Consumption.

Nevertheless such is the Force of Prejudice, that *Morton* himself, to whom we are beholden for so many Observations upon this Malady, mentions the Ulcer in his Definition of a Consumption as the Difference which characterises it, *Phthisis est corporis contabescencia et consumptio ab ulcere in pulmonibus oriunda*. "Consumption" is a wasting of the Body from an Ulcer in the "Lungs." And the Physicians have almost all copied from one another and successively run on in this Error, like those Birds who flying swiftly follow with Precipitation such as have already entangled themselves in the Net.

The Delusion that has made them mistake in this Point comes doubtless from hence, that upon opening of consumptive Bodies they often have found an Ulcer, and without extending their Views any farther, either upon the Causes which produced the Tubercles, or upon their Inflammation or Suppuration which left the Ulcer, they have settled the Cause of this Disease.

The slow Fever depends as much upon the Obstructions of the Liver as of the Lungs; when the Blood finds its Passage shut up in any Part, it rebounds in a greater Body into the other Vessels. Besides, when the Blood which has not been broke in the Lungs, nor depurated in the Liver, doth not give way but resists to the impulse of the Heart and Arteries, it

revives

revives its Play, and occasions 2 or 3 Pulsations, where one would be sufficient if it did not resist and were thin and fluid.

The nocturnal Sweats are owing to the thick and gross Disposition of the Blood; when the Serum is not exactly mixt with the other Principles of the Blood, it easily escapes through the Pores.

The Bitterness which *Hippocrates* has observed in the Spittle, *Sputum paulo amarius solito*, may be accounted for from the Obstruction of the Liver, the Bile not finding its Strainers open returns into the other Emunctories, mixes with the Spittle, and gives it that bitter Taste.

It is easy to comprehend the spitting of Blood. Who can now be surpris'd that a Vein squeezed between two Tubercles should open and furnish some Blood in the Spittle?

We are now come to the second Stage. Some Tubercles come to be inflamed, Matter is formed there, the Fever increases, as also the Difficulty of breathing. These Accidents are agreeable to the Aph. of *Hippocrates*. *Dum pus conficitur labores accidunt magis quam jam confecto*, "Whilst the Pus is preparing the Pain is greater than when it is brought to Perfection." The Tubercle bursts, and the Pus comes away like Spittle, which the Patient voids in Abundance.

After the Evacuation of the Pus of this Tubercle gone to Suppuration the Fever diminishes, the Patient breathes more freely, and finds

finds himself better till another Tubercle is inflamed. The Physician attributes this short Truce to the Effects of his Remedies, but without Foundation, since the Patient is beholden for this Respite to the Evacuation of the Pus from the Tubercle that was broke

But as the Pus which was contained in this Tubercle served its Neighbours as a suppurating Cataplasm, they are not long before they are inflamed and come to Suppuration in their Turn, and the Lungs are thus destroyed and ulcerate every Day more and more.

Now the Distemper is contagious, the Suppuration of the Tubercle breeds Worms which constitute the Characteristick of the Ulcer. These Worms spread themselves about the neighbouring Tubercles as proper Beds for their Nourishment and Breeding, and by their Means it is that the Distemper becomes contagious. In the Treatise upon the Venereal Disorders we have shewn that all Infection proceeds from Worms.

The Nails grow crooked from wasting of the Fat and Flesh that supports them.

The Looseness comes from hence, that the Pores are destroyed by the dryness of the Skin, which has begun with effacing the Pores of the insensible Perspiration and now even stops up those which evacuate Sweat: The Serum not being well mixt with the Blood, and finding no more its former Out-lets, falls upon the Feet and Legs, and afterwards upon the intestinal

nal

nal Glands, which brings on a Diarrhœa, and makes an End of Life.

From the Principles which we have established it is very easy to explain why the Exercise on Horseback is so sovereign and so specifick a Remedy for a Consumption.

Let us begin with proving the Fact; we shall give the Reason of it afterwards.

Sydenham in his Dissertation which he has inscribed to Dr. *William Cole*, expresses himself in these Terms, which I have transcribed faithfully and literally.

“ Nor is this kind of Exercise more beneficial to hypochondriacal People, than to those that are in a Consumption, of which some of my Relations have been cured by riding long Journeys by my Advice; for I knew I could not cure them better by Medicines of what Value soever, or by any other Method. Nor is this Remedy proper only in small Indispositions, accompanied with a Cough and Leanness, but also in Consumptions that are most deplorable, when the Loosness abovementioned accompanies the Night Sweats, which are wont to be the Fore-runners of Death in those that die of a Consumption. To be short, how deadly soever a Consumption is and is said to be, two thirds dying of it who are ruined by chronical Diseases, yet I sincerely assert, that Mercury in the *French Pox*, and the Jesuits Bark in Agues, are not more efficacious, than the Exercise above-mentioned
“ curing

“ curing a Consumption, if the Sick be careful, and the Sheets be well aired, and that
 “ his Journeys are long enough. But this must
 “ be noted, that those who are past the Flower of their Age; must use this Exercise
 “ much longer, than those that have not yet
 “ arrived to it, and this I have learned by
 “ long Experience, which scarce ever failed
 “ me.”

This practical Fact which so grave an Author as *Sydenham* proposes, which he affirms upon his Word, deserves infinite Regard; let them criticise as much as they please upon the Reason he gives for it, the Truth of the Fact cannot be contested without insulting his Probity, Justness and Candor, without changing his glorious Memory into that of an Impostor pernicious to all Mankind, which those who have known him, or who shall read his Works will never think him capable of.

The late Mon. *Emerick* the Father, our antient Collegue, has told me he had known *Sydenham* at *Montpelier*, (with whom he was very great, and even had entertained a Correspondence of Letters with him) and that he was a Man of great Judgment and undoubted Honesty, as may be judged from his Print, but much better from his Works.

Sydenham is not the only one who has observed the Usefulness of this Exercise in a Consumption, *Lindanus* relates an Example quoted by *Etmuller*. A Citizen of *Anchusa* called *Angerius Passa* saw his Father and Mother die
 of

of a Consumption; his elder Sister fell into the same Distemper and died, his youngest Sister expired soon of the same Disease, and his 3d and last Sister met with the same Fate. *Angerius Passa* went a travelling from Country to Country to avoid the like Destiny (the Succession of his whole Family centring in him, put him into a Condition to bear the Expence of it,) and by continual Exercise he escaped the Distemper. *Et peregrinatione continua malum evitavit. Etmuller* pag. 280. which ought to be attributed to the Usefulness of Motion, and not to the Change of Air.

However the Exercise on Horseback is not beneficial only, but also the riding in a Coach. *Vectio frequens in curru fere eodem recidit, et quamvis Equo vehi phthificis præcipue conferat, tamen et itinera curru facta mirandos Effectus quandoque ediderunt. Sydenh.* “And the riding
“ on Horseback is chiefly beneficial to People
“ that have a Consumption, yet riding Jour-
“ nies in a Coach is sometimes very benefi-
“ cial. *Syd.*”

Going in a Ship has also its Use, by Reason of the shaking of the Vessel. *Pliny* explains himself in these Terms. *Navigatio utilis est phthificis et sanguinem egerentibus sicut proxime Anneum Gallionem post Consulatum fuisse mimumus, neque enim Ægyptus propter se petitur sed propter longinquitatem navigandi,* “Na-
“ vigating is beneficial to consumptive Persons
“ and those who spit Blood, as we remember
“ *Anneus Gællio* was after his Consulate,
“ no

“ nor do People go to *Egypt* for its own sake,
 “ but on account of the Length of the sailing.”

But we have the living Evidence of Persons in every Station of Life, who have experienced the Benefit of the Exercise on Horseback in an approaching and even confirmed Phthisis; I shall quote three of them that are well known and worthy of Credit, whom I have selected from a great Number.

Mon. *de Segur du Vigean*, a young Gentleman of the most antient Family of this Country was seized with a dry and obstinate Cough, he afterwards brought up some Flegm, a slow Fever complicated with Returns came upon it and a Wasting. This Cough exceeded the Bounds of a common Rheum, and appeared so much the more suspicious as it was accompanied with Hoarseness, and Difficulty of Breathing, and as his Mother had died of a Consumption.

I ordered him to ride on Horseback Nights and Mornings, and made him take an aperitive Electuary of which I shall give the *Recipe* presently; and he was cured. The Father and all the Family will give to any one a faithful Account of the happy Success of this Exercise in the Person of this young Gentleman.

Mon. *Mattereau*, a Surgeon of this City, of great Reputation, was come to the first Stage of a Consumption, and to the Brink of the Second, he even maintained that there was some Pus in his Spittle, of which I take him to be a
 I good

good Judge. All the Town thought there was no Hopes of him. *Jam una erat tota in civitate fabula expiraturum brevi peritissimum opificem.* He took to Riding on Horseback, by the Advice of Dr. Seris and my self, by the help of which and a good Regimen which he chose himself, he came to see us again in good Health.

Monf. Guerin, the Elder, Merchant of *Chartons*, after he had cough'd a long time, and decayed by a slow Fever, came at last to spitting of Pus. I made him ride on Horseback, and notwithstanding the Sneer which was put upon my Advice, he followed it; animated by the Success he continued it, and by the Assistance of other Remedies, of which we shall speak in his Observation, he recovered his Health, has married since, and no one is better than he; it is now 12 Years since his Recovery.

I have sent consumptive Persons to *Bareges*, to drink of that deobstruent Water, not that I depended so much upon the Waters as upon the Benefit of going thither, which is 300 Miles from hence, and always with good Success.

I know some of the Profession have contested the practical Facts, and turned them into Ridicule; but I rather have ascribed their Raillery to a defect of Knowledge and Penetration than to base Calumny.

The servile Fear of exposing his Reputation to unjust Criticism ought not to deter a Physician from employing an Exercise which so many Experiments and Observations have

U

proved

proved to be salutary ; and we should never be ashamed to expose upon the Patient's Bed's-head the Idea we frame in our Studies.

If in Reality the Exercise on Horseback is so wholesome to consumptive Persons, the Rationale of it is also very evident.

What Infarction and Tubercle of the Lungs can be conceived which a Million of Shakes excited by the Motion of the Horse in the same Day are not able to bruise and destroy, especially when they are renewed the next Day and the Days following, without Intermission.

The Lungs may receive more Benefit from this Exercise than any other Bowel. Nature which makes the most of all her Motions seems to have suspended them in the Cavity of the Breast, like a Clapper of a Bell fit to turn about, as it were, upon the ordinary and extraordinary Motions of the Body, to accelerate in this Bowel the Circulation of the Fluids, and prevent by this Means the Generation of Concretions or Tubercles, or to destroy them in their Birth ; without this prudent and wise Mechanism, the Consumption would be the general Bane of Mankind. *Alioquin necesse esset phthisim universalem fore generis humani pestem.* Mort.

But it is not only the Lungs which profit by this Exercise, the Obstruction of the Liver which accompanies a Phthisis is removed at the same time ; the Stomach and the other Bowels are re-established in their Functions, and the insensible Transpiration is restored and increased

fed considerably, as is proved by the Aphor. of *Sanctorius* and *Kiel's* Observations.

I am surpris'd that *Morton*, who mentions *Sydenham* in his Preface with so much Praise, has pass'd by in Silence, and not so much as mentioned in his Treatise of Consumptions, *Sydenham's* Experiments concerning the Usefulness of Riding, and that he neither has approved nor censured this Remedy.

After all that has been said upon the Cause of Consumptions, it will not seem surpris'ing that the Method which is commonly put in Practice to cure consumptive Persons, doth not succeed, but the contrary.

Let us return to the Institutes of Physick and to its Principles. *In legitima curatione causa morbi primo auferenda est, secundo ipse morbus, si post causæ ablationem superstes manet.* River. p. 145. "In a true Cure the Cause of the Distemper ought to be removed first, secondly the Disease itself if it continues after the Cause is abolished." What is it we do to destroy the Concretions, these Tubercles of the Lungs, this Obstruction of the Liver? Shall we expect this Effect from the narcotick Medicines which *Morton* declares to be Poison? from expectorating and in-crasating Syrups, from Broth made of Tortoises, Frogs, and Snails, from fix'd and terrestrious Alkali's, from Milk, the Bark, &c? All these things serve only to increase the Number of Tubercles and their Bigness; but we shall pur-

sue this Idea further in our second Proposition.

We come now to examine the antecedent Causes which produce Tubercles in the Lungs, and shall make appear by an exact Inquiry that they owe their Rise to eager and coagulating Juices, and not to sharp and corrosive ones.

I shall propose no others than those which have been observed by very grave Authors, and shall make use of their own Experiments, to prove what is here advanced.

First, Authors tell us, and we see it confirmed by daily Experience, that Grief is a powerful Cause to bring on a Consumption. The Soul being continually employed in Affliction about the Object which causes it, studies Night and Day to find out a Remedy: This continual Attention of the Soul employs the Spirits in the Brain, hinders their descending into the Stomach, the Appetite disappears, the Digestion suffers, the Chyle is sent glutinous and ill digested into the Blood, disposed to bring on Obstructions either in the Lungs or Liver.

But the free Course of the animal Spirits is not only suspended in the Stomach, but also in the Organs of Respiration. We see Persons under Affliction forget as it were to breathe to that Degree, that as the Blood stagnates in the Lungs, they are obliged to fetch at Intervals deep Sighs, which are called *Suspiria luctuosa*, "Sorrowful Sighs." Those who are in Trouble

ble are like what *Duret* mentions of Peasants who look upon a fine Picture with Admiration. *Quod cernere est in rusticis hominibus, qui stupent attoniti visu Tabulae politissimæ arte depictæ, quam dum hiante ore magnaque animi attentione intuentur, non ante respirant quam nimia oppressione propemodum suffocati ad se redierint.* "As may be seen in Peasants, who stand
"astonished at the Sight of a fine Picture, and
"whilst they are gazing upon it open mouth'd
"and with great Attention, breathe not till they
"come to themselves, being almost suffocated." Now this want of equal and natural Respiration gives room for Liquids to stagnate, to candy and to form Tubercles, especially when accompanied by a Defect in the Digestion.

Besides Grief suppresses the insensible Transpiration. *Sanct. Aph. 2. Sect. 7.* and Consolation restores it, *Animi consolatio liberam facit Perspirationem. Aph. 6. Ejusdem Sect.*

For the same Reason Men of Letters, who keep their Spirits continually upon the Stretch by the Excess of Meditation, are also subject to Consumptions, as *Morton* observes.

The eager Wines, according to *Etmuller*, produce abundance of Consumptions in the Province of *Moravia*, as being very proper to form Coagulations and Concretions. I shall mention here an Observation, which proves how apt this Cause is to bring on a Consumption.

Mademoiselle *Lapaneterie* the younger, a Gentlewoman of Fashion and very rich, enjoy'd

perfect Health, was pretty Jolly, had a good Appetite and a strong Colour in her Face, &c. She began to think herself too fat for her Size, so much the rather as her Friends foretold her she would in a little time be like her Mother, who was exceeding corpulent. Her Colour also was in her Opinion too strong, and she feared People would think she drank; this made her very uneasy, and she look'd out for Means to obviate these two Misfortunes. What doth not a young unmarried Woman do to preserve her Shape and Colour in Perfection? A Woman advises her to drink every Day a little Glass of Vinegar: She follows the Advice, her Flesh diminishes, as also her lively Colour. Charmed with the Success of this Remedy, she continues it longer than a Month, she begins to cough; this Cough is look'd upon only as a Rheum which will go off; nevertheless the dry Cough changes and she begins to expectorate, a slow Fever comes on, a Difficulty of breathing, she grows lean, and wastes, after that come nocturnal Sweats, nauseating, Swelling of her Feet and Legs, and lastly a Looseness carries her off.

We thought our selves happy that the Patient never spit any Blood or Pus, but concocted Flegm, &c. At the opening of the Body we found all the Lobes of the Lungs full of Tubercles, and not one of them come to Suppuration. I cannot compare the Gentlewoman's Lungs to any thing better than a Bunch of Grapes; the Tubercles represented the Grapes, and

and the Branches of the Aspera Arteria the Stalks upon which they grow. She had taken the Bark a long time, also Febrifuge, absorbent and sweetening Electuaries, the Asses Milk, Cray-fish Broth, with which was joyned the pectoral Plants, to prevent the Ulceration of the Lungs: But the Consumption went on its own Pace 'till Death.

In a Consultation of a great number of my Collegues held in behalf of this young Lady, I proposed to make her travel about in a Chaise, and inforced as much as in me lay the Reasons before mentioned. I was the youngest and spoke first, this Advice was despised and found fault with by those who gave their Opinion after me; they were surpris'd that I had dared to advance so extravagant a Notion, but were still more so when they found that the late Dr. *Tartar*, who spoke last, whose sound Judgment and Honesty was well known, came into my Sentiments and supported it by very good Reasons; but as the Majority was against us, this Advice was not followed.

Melancholical Persons, according to *Morton's* Observation, are very subject to Consumptions, their Blood being disposed to form Obstructions and Tubercles.

Morton, p. 27. has observed that Cold is always the Cause of Consumptions; his Observation agrees with that of *Hippocrates*, *Frigus genitor est phthiseos pulmonis, scilicet Venulis à frigore constrictis ac convulsis.* " Cold is the

296 A DISSERTATION

“ Parent of the Phthisis of the Lungs, viz,
 “ when the Veins are drawn together by Cold.”
 Now is any thing more fit to fix and congeal
 the Fluids, especially when the Lungs are
 heated?

Galen explaining Aph. 9. Sect. 5, above
 quoted, is of Opinion that this Age is more
 susceptible of Consumptions than any other,
 because we then use commonly more violent
 Exercises and are more debauched. *Ob saltus,*
clamores, luctus, variaque vitæ errata, quibus
ætas illa inquies et improvise dedita est. Expe-
 rience confirms *Galen's* Sentiment: when the
 heated Lungs respire a cold Air, the Humors
 are condensed there, for the same Reason as
 we see freeze in the midst of Summer hot
 Liquors poured into Vessels cool'd with Ice.

Persons that have a narrow Breast and high
 Shoulders are subject to a Consumption as
Hippocr. observes, because the Lungs being
 confined and not having Room enough to re-
 ceive the Air and to favour the Breaking of
 the Blood, the Fluids easily stop and stagnate
 there. Besides the Lungs of the Persons
 whom *Hipp.* describes are of an oblong Shape,
 and the Fluids rise up again with more Diffi-
 culty, than when they are broader and shorter.

Van Helmont has observed that the Steams of
 Spirit of Vitriol and of Aqua Fortis have
 sometimes occasioned a Consumption: This
 Effect proceeds from the Concretion of the
 Juices, by these acid Vapours which form the
 Tubercles.

From

From this Inquiry into all the Causes, which are capable of producing Tubercles in the Lungs, it appears, that they owe their Origin to acid and coagulating Juices, and if afterwards the Fluids grow pungent, by stagnating there, it is an Effect of the Part which alkalises them, in like manner as we see some Fruits change their Taste according as they come near to be ripe or rotten.

SECOND PROPOSITION.

Of the Cure of a Consumption.

YOU comprehend beforehand by what I have said, the Nature of the Remedy which I make use of for consumptive Persons.

If it is true, as it is not to be doubted, that these Tubercles are the conjoint Cause of a Consumption, that all the Symptoms depend from it and not from the Ulcer (since there have been phthysical Persons without Ulcers, but never without Tubercles) if it is also incontestable, that according to the best Rules the true Method would tend towards carrying off the Cause: The Indication therefore which naturally presents itself is to destroy those Tubercles, to melt them, to dissolve them, and to restore the Lungs to their Functions again, and to put them into a Situation to render the Blood all those Services for which they were designed.

To

298 A DISSERTATION

To flatter our selves that we can cure a Consumption without dissolving the Tubercles, which have occasioned it, is Abuse and Illusion: And to endeavour to calm the Cough, and Watchings by narcotick Syrups, &c. to pretend to stop with the Bark a symptomatick Fever which comes from Obstructions, and afterwards from the mixing of the Pus of the Ulcer with the Blood, altho' this could be effected, is it not fixing upon the Symptom and neglecting the Cause of the Distemper?

If the useful Experience of so many who have fell Victims to this Method doth not shew the Inconvenience of it, Reason and the Rules of Art demonstrate it.

I suppose, that an Arm through a strong Ligature which hindered the Circulation of the Blood, is fell into an Inflammation and Suppuration; what would you say of that Surgeon who should with Cataplasms, Oyls, Balsams, &c. dress the Arm, without thinking to cut first the Ligature which occasioned the Disorder, and to restore the Liberty of the Circulation?

Mutato nomine de te

Fabula narratur.

“ The Story is told of Thee, the Name
“ only changed.”

To pretend with Obstinacy to cure with the Bark a slow hectick Fever occasioned by Obstructions, either in the Lungs or Liver, or lastly by the Inflammation of the Tubercles,
their

their Suppuration, or the Ulcer following upon it, the Matter whereof is absorbed by the Blood in its Circulation; is imploying the Bark out of its Province, it is striving against Reason, Experience and the Rules of Art. This Drug, which was not sufficiently esteemed when first it was brought into *Europe*, is now in too high an Esteem, and become a universal Remedy with some Physicians. *Cui credulum Medicorum vulgus nimis confidit.* "To which
"the credulous Rabble of Physicians trust
"too much," even in Fevers which are not subjected to its Vertue, like those of which we now treat. The Bark is there as useless, as it is specifick in Fevers purely intermitten, and the Disorders depending upon them; *Nec juvat ulterius.* "Neither will it do any farther Service." If in 8 Days time the Bark taken regularly, (provided it be not evacuated by Vomiting or Looseness) doth not cure the Fever, it is a Sign that it doth not fall under its Jurisdiction.

The Question then is to look out for Remedies which can dissolve and destroy these Tubercles. This is the Indication which you ought not to lose out of Sight; they are the Obstacles which you must either conquer or die.

Think not that I advance here a new System, without having some grave Authors to warrant my Conduct.

Morton Pag. 53. proposes this Indication.
Obstructiones removendæ sunt, tonusque partium
con-

300 A DISSERTATION

confirmandus, ex via chalybis vel arte vel natura parati. "The Obstructions are to be removed, and the Tone of the Parts restored, by means of Steel, either prepared by Art or Nature." I am sorry that this celebrated Author doth not make this Indication shine better, which is found buried and hidden under a Heap of Remedies, while he proposes to answer a Number of others, which ought not to come into Competition with this glorious Indication. For if in his whole Work and in all his Observations, he makes continually mention of these Tubercles and Obstructions, if he himself deduces the Symptoms of the Phthisis from thence, and if he looks on them as Authors of the Disorder, is it possible for us to be too hard upon them? You cannot but look out for the best Dissolvents, Deobstruents, and Aperitives, and afterwards for the properest Remedies to consolidate and cicatrise the Ulcer.

Morton is not the only one that proposes this Indication. The *Roman Hippocrates Baglivius*, in several Places of his practical Writings, exhorts us to give aperitive Medicines in all the Disorders of the Breast, *in pectoris morbis semper ducendum ad vias urinæ.*

Two great Reasons confirm this practical Rule, (1.) The Medicines we make use of to provoke the Urine are dissolvent, deobstruent and aperitive, consequently proper to destroy Obstructions and the Tubercles of the Lungs which we have to combat. (2.) An Increase of the urinary Discharge contributes towards the

the Cure. *Duretus* in his *Coac.* p. 423. says, that the urinary Passages are the Emunctories of the Breast, the Flux of Urine being augmented procures a Diversion of the Flegm, which otherwise would take its Course to the Lungs. Besides we have an anatomical Reason which proves that a Discharge by Urine is useful and favourable in all Disorders of the Breast.

The Vein Azygos pours Part of its Blood through a considerable Trunk into the Emulgent Vein, whilst the greater runs towards the upper Veins. When the Emulgent Vein is considerably emptied by the Running off of a great Quantity of Serum through the Kidnies by Vertue of diuretic Medicines, it readily receives the Blood that comes from the Breast by the Branch of the Vena Azygos, which, as is well known, brings the Blood back from the external Parts of the Breast, and the Circulation of the Blood becomes the freer for it. By this Mechanism diuretic Medicines may be of use in Disorders of the Breast; but in what manner soever the Advantage comes is of no Importance to the Patient, provided he doth but recover his Health.

These Authors not only propose that Indication, but also the Remedies which I make use of to discharge it. Read *Morton* p. 81. *Nullus dubito quin prudenti delectu et frequenti mutatione tenuis et aprici aeris, et longo usu medicaminum balsamicorum, mercurialium, Chalybeatorum, millepedum, præcipue vero aquarum*

mineralium, atque aliorum antiscrophulorum remedium isti tumores in his æque ac in aliis partibus consumi possint, atque æger inde liberari a phthifico et scrophuloso affectu, quod sæpius experti sumus. “ I don’t at all doubt, but by a
 “ prudent Choice and frequent Use of a thin
 “ and sharp Air, and by a long Use of balsamic, mercurial and chalybeat Medicines and
 “ Millepedes, but more especially of mineral
 “ Waters and other antiscrophulous Remedies,
 “ those Tumours may as well be destroyed in these Parts as any other, and the
 “ Patient be freed from a phthifical and scrophulous Disorder, as we have often found
 “ by Experience.

Let us resume here the Comparison we have proposed in the first Part of our Dissertation concerning the Resemblance between the scrophulous and phthifical Disorder. This Comparison is to be admitted so much the rather since *Morton* mentions a sort of Consumption produced by a scrophulous Taint, and that besides the Causes of the Phthisis and of the Scrophulæ perfectly resemble each other, both in their Origin and Progress, as we have said in our first Proposition, so that the Phthisis may be called the Scrophulæ of the Lungs.

This is not a Nick-name I give to Consumptions, the celebrated *Sydenham*, who was writing a Treatise upon this Distemper when the Faculty or rather all Mankind lost him by Death, has observed that scrophulous Tumours appeared in the Necks of those who had been

cured of Consumptions by riding on Horseback. *Quibusdam eorum qui ex hac methodo convaluere tumor in collo exortus est non multum a scrophulis abludens.* What Physician, how little soever vers'd in the Motions of Nature, can deny that this scrophulous Tumor which arises in the Neck after the Cure of a Consumption, is not a true *Metastasis*, or Translation of Matter from the Lungs, and which drove away from this Bowel by the Vibrations and Spring which the Exercise of the Horse has occasioned in the pulmonary Fibres, has resumed its natural Place?

This Observation makes it appear that the Cause of the Scrophulæ and of the Phthisis is one and the same; and that these Disorders differ only according to the different Parts they lodge upon.

I shall therefore not be censured for employing for a Phthisis the same Remedies which I have found successful in the Scrophulæ. Analogical Reasoning has been received by all Physicians as a Means to find out proper Remedies. *River. pag 144. de remediorum inventione.*

If I have seen external scrophulous Ulcers destroyed, and Tumors which gave them Birth dissolved by the Use of Mercury, Mars, Millepedes, Drink, composed of aperitive and antiscorbutic Plants, and capital Obstructions of the Liver removed by the same Method, as has been said in the Treatise on the Venereal Disorder; should I not dare to make Use of
it

it to destroy Tubercles and Concretions in the Lungs, and by that means remove the Ulcer which infests them, and which so much resembles the scrophulous kind, especially when nothing else can be done, when otherwise I must determine to see the Patient die with my Arms across, having learnt by fatal Experience that all the rest is to no Purpose?

A Physician need never fear that he shall bring his Reputation into question, and pass for being particular in his Advice, and enterprising in his Practice, if he steps out of the Road in which all others have been misled, to follow a new Path traced from the Authority of Writers, and enforced by Reason, Analogy and Experience.

The principal Benefit of the frequent Change of Air which *Morton* recommends is owing to the Exercise, as *Plinius* has observed. *Hippocr.* in his 6th Book of *Epid. in morbis longis terram commode mutari.* "It is proper in "Chronical Distempers to change Climates." And I doubt not but to Exercise is attributed chiefly the Success the *English* People in Consumptions met with, that were sent into *France* in *Meniot's* Time. *In Galliam Narbonensem.* "Into the lower Parts of *France.*"

I don't question that the Country Air has its Share in the Success which the Exercise of the Carriage produces. In Towns, especially those that are well peopled, the Air is always gross; from the Cellars, Kitchens, Work-Shops, Stables, and the Streets themselves, there rises
up

up by that continual Motion, a Dust and Vapour which makes the Air weigh heavy upon the Surface of our Bodies, pressing upon them both in an horizontal and perpendicular Direction. This Compression hinders the elastic Vertue of the internal Air mixt with our Blood and Juices from exerting itself; but when we go into the Country into a pure Air, or get a top some Eminence, the external Air there is less ponderous, and the elastic Vertue of the internal has more Liberty to expand itself, and to accelerate the Course of the animal Fluids: From hence it is, that when we are upon a high Place the Breast opens wider, and we breathe much freer. I heard *Monf. Duverney* explain this Phænomenon after this Manner in his Anatomical Lectures, which exactly corresponds with the Experiments of the Air-pump.

Mercury, that *Hercules* fit to conquer so many Evils, resembling those Tools which serve almost in every Art, which destroys the Tumours in Bones, Ulcers, &c. should this be useless only in Tubercles and Ulcers of the Lungs?

Should Mars, which is so efficacious in destroying the capital Obstructions of the Liver, be forgot in the Obstructions of the Lungs? And should this Drug, so excellent in the Asthma and all chronical Distempers (*suprema morborum chronicorum panacea*) lose its Credit and Reputation in the Tubercles of the Lungs only?

The Millepedes, which contain a very volatile Salt, proper to unlock the Blood, and to mix its Serum with its other Principles, ought not to be disregarded, since they also open the Kidneys and provoke Urine. *Et urinas potenter movent, nec tenellis pulmonum membranis infensi sunt, Bagl. Prax. Med.*

Shall Diet-drinks made of aperitive and antiscorbutic Plants, the Asses Milk with the Juices of these same Plants, not take place of incrassating and narcotick Syrups?

The Use of Water-Cresses, if we may believe *Bonnetus's* Observation 23. pag. 693. Tom. 2. has alone been able to cure a confirmed Phthisis; and altho' I don't repeat here his Observation, which might appear fabulous, his Comment may deserve reading. *Et si plurimis dubia possit esse fides historię, vel eo nomine quod morbus remediis fere insuperabilis nasturtii solius esui cesserit, si tamen ejus nasturtii vires et morbi causa ad examen revocentur, res omnino verisimilitudine non caret, phthisis tum pulmonaris, tum ab aliis causis inducťa ortum ducit à lymphā crassiore reddita infarciēte tum pulmonum vesiculas, tum glandulas in mesenterio sitas, quāmobrem illis oppletis officio male funguntur, corruptio illos invadit à lymphę scilicet putredine, his scilicet glandulis obstructis à crassiore lymphā chylus venas lactęas non permeat, hinc destitutę alimento partes tabescunt. At vero inter plantas, quę lympham crassantem atque concretam solvere & liquefacere valent,*

*valent, non infimas tenet partes nasturtium multo
sale volatili pollens, qui diuturno usu tabem ab
ejusmodi causa inductam superare valeat.* " Altho'
" many may doubt the Truth of this Story,
" for the Reason, that this almost unconquer-
" able Distemper should have given way to
" the eating of Cresses only. But when you
" examine the Vertues of this Plant and the
" Cause of the Distemper, the thing is not
" so improbable: For a Consumption from
" the Lungs or any other Cause owes its Rise
" to a thick Lymph stuffing the Vesiculæ
" pulmonales, as also the Glands in the Me-
" sentery; wherefore when they are fill'd up
" the Lungs don't perform their Office as they
" ought, and Corruption invades them from
" a Putrefaction of the Lymph, and these
" Glands being obstructed by a thick Lymph,
" the Chyle doth not pass through the lacteal
" Veins, wherefore the Parts decay for want
" of Nourishment. But among the Plants
" which have a Vertue of liquefying and
" dissolving a thickned and congealed Lymph,
" the Nasturtium is none of the least pow-
" erful, being strongly impregnated with a
" Volatile Salt, which by a long Use may
" overcome a Consumption from such a Cause."

However, by proposing the dissolvent and
aperitive Medicines as above, I don't pretend
to exclude the Usefulness of others which Bo-
tany and Chymistry may supply, *mibi sufficit
innuisse quibus indicationibus satisfaciendum sit.*

Syd. in Præf. "It is enough for me to have
"hinted what Indications are to be satisfy'd."
I admonish my Brethren and those that shall
come after me to search after better Specificks.

It will be objected without doubt, that these
dissolvent and aperitive Medicines ought not
to be put in practice in Patients who have
spit Blood; that these Remedies may be apt
to bring the Hæmoptosis again, that the Con-
cretion made upon the opening of a Blood
Vessel will be destroyed by these Remedies,
which appear to be as proper to renew the
spitting of Blood, as to destroy the Tubercles
which we endeavour to dissolve.

I answer this Panick is without Founda-
tion, for three Reasons; 1.) The Vein which
has furnished the Blood, never opens again
in the Place where it is healed; the Cicatrice
is too solid to leave any Room to fear its open-
ing again in the same Place. This appears
plain in Persons that have been blooded often:
The Surgeon never chuses an old Cicatrice to
make his Orifice, and when he is obliged to
do it, he finds there a stronger Resistance for
his Lancer. So that if the Hæmoptosis is
renewed, it is not from the same Place burst-
ing open again, but that the Tubercles press
the Vein, hinder the return of the Blood and
force it when it has been very much widened
to give way, and to open in another Place.
2.) Altho' there should be some Risque of
renewing the Hæmoptosis, the Indication of

the aperitive Medicines ought to outweigh the Contra-indication; for it is of so great Importance to destroy these Tubercles, that nothing can counterbalance the Necessity thereof. 3.) Experience contradicts this Objection, and to give a convincing Proof of it I shall relate the Observation of the Reverend Father, *François de Lourde*, a Capuchin, at full length.

This young Priest was seized with a dry Cough, which some time after was followed by a copious spitting of Blood. He was blooded divers times, took Nettle Juice, and absorbents to prevent falling into a Consumption, having all the Marks of it mentioned by *Hippocrates* in his 1st Book of Epid. Notwithstanding all these Remedies the Distemper appeared again, every Fortnight he voided a great Quantity of Blood, which gave occasion to new Venæsection, and in the Space of 3 Years whilst this spitting of Blood lasted he was blooded so often, that he lost his Sight by it, and in proportion as his Blood came again and his Strength returned, he recovered his Sight a little in one of his Eyes, and by the Help of a Glass he could read Mafs; but the spitting of Blood constantly seized him twice a Month.

During the three Years of his Illness he was under the Care of divers Physicians, among the rest a very famous and experienced Practitioner in the City of *Peau* in *Bearn*, whom my Father had a great Regard for, proposing him to me as an Example, and speaking of him

him with great Praise, after he had seen some of his first Cures.

This Fryar was sent to the Convent of *Bourdeaux*; after I had taken into consideration the Usefulness of all the Medicines apply'd by so many able Physicians, the constant Returning of the Hæmoptosis every Fortnight, his habitual Difficulty of breathing, and that he was inclined to a Consumption; I did not doubt but he had Tubercles in his Lungs in great Number, and that if they had not already suppurated it was owing to the great Quantity of Blood he had lost, either by the Hæmoptosis or Venæsection. *Notum est omnibus in Medicina et Chirurgia mediocriter versatis venæsectionem maturationem tardiore reddere.* Mort. "It is well known to all that are a little versed in Physic and Surgery, that Venæsection retards Maturation." But I was well persuaded that some of them would come to suppurate in time, *à sanguinis sputo puris sputum*, &c. Moreover I perceived a considerable Obstruction in the Region of his Liver. This Fryar was lean, weak, pale and in a languishing Condition.

Altho' Winter was coming on I undertook to cure him according to the System before mentioned. I made them apply a large Plaster of *Vigonis cum Mercurio* upon the Region of the Liver, which was renew'd from time to time, and ordered him to take the following Powder Nights and Mornings, drinking some Tea after it.

Take

Take of prepared Mars, Millepedes, Benjamin, red Coral and Crabs Eyes, one Scruple of each, mix all well together to make into a Powder to be taken in the Morning and to be repeated at Night.

By the help of these plain and easy Remedies continued a long Time, this Fryar recovered his Strength and Colour, his Appetite and Sight returned, and he could say Mass without Spectacles. The Hæmoptosis was perfectly cured, his Respiration became free and easy, the Tumor of his Liver was intirely dissipated and he is now very well. I quote for ocular Witnesses of the Truth of this Fact, the Reverend Father *Bernard de Bedechamp* his Guardian and Provincial, Brother *Pierre*, Apothecary of the Capuchin Fryars in this City, and Dr. *Cazaux*, my Collegue, who was pleased during my last Illness to visit him and follow my System.

I allow that this Thought will appear rash and irregular to those who have conceived other Notions about this Distemper, tending rather to the Symptom than the Disease itself. *Durus est hic Sermo, quis potest illum capere?* "This is a hard Speech, who can take it?" But I flatter myself that frequent Experience will make them change their Opinion, especially if they put in practice this first and very wise Lesson of *Des Cartes*, in his Principles of Philosophy, That we should doubt of all Prejudices which we formed before we came to the Age of Manhood, &c.

The following Observation which I have taken from *Morton*, p. 97. resembling in all the Symptoms this Fryar's Distemper, made me take the Hint of curing the Hæmoptosis by dissolvent and aperitive Medicines.

" A Master of Arts was taken with a Spitting of Blood, he lost a great deal of Blood before I was called, I made use of Bleeding, Ligatures, Electuaries, astringent Syrups, a white Diet, and the Blood was stopt. However his Cough and Leanness remained; I continued the Milk and a narcotick Electuary every Night, and to prevent the Phthisis which I imagined threatned him, I made him open an Issue in his Arm, and the Emplastrum Cephalicum was put on his Head shaved. I sent him into the Country, where I recommended him to take Nettle and Plantain Juice twice a Day, notwithstanding these Remedies the slow Fever and Cough continued and the Hæmoptosis returned twice a Month, towards the full and new Moon, he grew leaner every Day, and lastly the Scene ended with a Diarrhœa, Sweats and a Dropsy.

" At the opening of his Body I found the Lungs swell'd, and all the Lobes fill'd with Tubercles, some crude and others ulcerated."

Without pretending to derogate from the Reputation of this celebrated Author, nor the Obligations which the Science of Physick owes him, permit me to make the following Reflexions upon this Observation. (1.) The obstinate

stinate Cough, the Leanness and the slow Fever depended on the great number of Tubercles which he found upon the opening of the Body ; as also the spitting of Blood as we have explained elsewhere, it was then improper to hope for a Cure, but by endeavouring to dissolve and destroy them, which could not be expected from the narcotic Electuary, the Milk, the astringent Juices, the Issue, the Plaister on the Head, &c. (2.) *Morton* repents that he did not prescribe the Bark to this Patient. *Eo enim tempore non eram expertus Corticis Peruviani Efficaciam ad hanc febrem hecticam tollendam, à qua ista funesta colliquatio ortum ducebat.* “ At that time I “ had not yet experienced the Efficacy of the “ Bark in removing that hectic Fever, from “ whence that fatal Colliquation did proceed.” But who can imagine that these Tubercles which occupy’d the Lungs and the Fever depending upon them, could have been rooted out by the Bark, of which he says himself pag. 43. that he has found it useless? *Neque quidem hæc febris ope corticis Peruviani, cujus vim in hoc casu sum expertus radicitus extirpari potest.* And certainly, from a great number of Experiments I dare to affirm, that he no more would have succeeded in dispersing these Tubercles by the Bark, than by the other Remedies which he made use of.

The Observation which he mentions of Mr. *Rook*’s should not serve for a Rule. The Hæmoptosis returned every other Day, and even some-

something every Day, there were plain Returns of a double Tertian. The Urine was red, and the Return of the Fever brought on the Hæmoptosis. *Insignem febrem certis intervallis recurrentem semper sternere viam sputo sanguinis subsequuturo observassem cum pulsu celeri & urina rubra.* Who doubts that the Bark was not a sovereign Remedy here, as well as in all Fevers returning at certain Periods, and which may be supposed to proceed from an intermittent Fever in Disguise, wherefore it is not surprising that he stopt the Hæmorrhage with the Bark, and that the Patient was better 6 Months. However for all this he was not cured; for the Cough, the Difficulty of breathing, and a little of the slow Fever remained, altho' less, and as he had not destroy'd the Tubercles which he found at the opening of the Body, (*Tuberculis infinitis ubique repletos*) the Patient died soon after this Truce.

3.) From what has been observed it follows that if *Morton* had apply'd to dissolve the Tubercles of the Lungs, which he found at the opening of the Body, and had employ'd dissolvent and aperitive Medicines which were indicated, not only by these Tubercles, but probably also by an Obstruction in the Liver, since the Patient became dropical, he would have saved him, as I cured my Capuchin.

4.) The Title which *Morton* gives to this Chapter may be changed, which contains this Observation, and even it ought to be reversed,

vers'd, and instead of *Phtbisis ab Hæmoptoe* he should have said *Hæmoptoe a Phtbisi*. For in short where do you find any phthifical Person opened in his Book without some Tubercles, which ought to be deemed the Cause of the spitting of Blood, and not the spitting of Blood the Cause of the Tubercles?

It will be objected in the second Place, that an Ulcer of the Lungs is incurable by reason of the continual Motion of this Bowel. I answer that the Lungs, the Bellows which every Moment new kindle the Flame of Life, may be cured of an Ulcer, since they may be cured when wounded; and if their continual Motion is no Hindrance for a Wound to be healed, it cannot hinder a Cicatrification of an Ulcer neither, provided it be treated methodically, that is to say by destroying the Cause which produces it, by dissolving the Tubercles, and hindering by that means the Ulcer from spreading from one Tubercle to another, like a Fire that runs from House to House.

It is certain that Wounds of the Lungs are cured. Some Surgeons of the Army of Credit have assured me that they had cured several of them. *Arceus* boasts of having cured them all. *Multos vidi quibus pulmo transfossus fuerat omnes Dei bonitate persanavi.* *Hipp.* in his *Coac.* says that all Wounds of the Lungs are not mortal. *Non omnia pulmonum ulcera exitialia sunt,* but only those through which more Air comes forth than by the *Trachea*.

You

316 A DISSERTATION

You find in *Lommius* a very extraordinary Observation. A Part of the Lungs came out at a Wound in the Breast, which mortify'd ; the Surgeon cut off that Part, and healed and cicatrised the whole, and the Patient lived many Years after. *Lommius de pulmonum Vulneribus.*

But let us now come to the practical Part, and after the Indications which we have proposed in general, we shall enter upon Particulars.

As soon as I am called to a consumptive Person of the first Degree, fatigued with a Cough, which at first was dry, and afterwards is become moist, which exceeded the Bounds of a common Rheum, accompanied with a slow Fever, Difficulty of breathing, Leanness, &c. I examine immediately the Liver, where I constantly find a conspicuous Hardness and often a Pain.

I afterwards examine if any General Medicines are indicated, in which Case I order the Patient to bleed and purge ; I even repeat bleeding when the Pain is violent, and if the Patient is young, heated with drinking of Wine, or spirituous Liquors, to prevent the Inflammation of the Tubercles.

Then I apply a great Plaister of the *Empl. diabolitanum* upon the Region of the Liver, with which Mercury revived from Cinnabar is incorporated, or in default thereof the *Empl. Vigonis cum Mercurio*. Every Night I order the Plaister to be taken off, and the Quantity
of

of a Dram of the mercurial Ointment to be rubb'd in at the Swelling, and then the Plaster is put on again, which remains there Night and Day.

Internally I give twice a Day the Powder described above, or made up into Troches after the following Manner. Take of Mars, Millepedes, Benjamin, Coral, and Crabs Eyes, of each half an Ounce, Powder of Cinnamon three Drams, fine Sugar half a Pound, mix all together, and with the Mucilage of Gum Tragacanth, made with Orange Flower Water, make Troches of two Drams each, of which let the Patient take one Night and Morning.

After every Dose of the Troches or Powder I order them to take a Draught of Ptisane made of Nettle-Roots, or of Whey well clarify'd, with which I mix two Ounces of the Juice of Water-Cresses, and as much of the Juice of Chervil, or some Broth made of a piece of Veal, Radishes of Perigord, Cresses, Brook-Lime, and Chervil, or an Infusion of Green Tea; of which I shall be more particular in my Observations.

If the Patient is in a Situation to be at the Expence of riding on Horseback, I make him do it constantly Morning and Evening, and oblige him to increase his Ride every Day, except bad Weather, a cold Wind, great Rains or Fogs oblige him to keep his Chamber near a good Fire till the Season permits to resume this Exercise so salutary in Consumptions, as has been proved from Reason and Experience.

It

318 A DISSERTATION

It is to be observed that very great Care must be had that the Patient may not get Cold during the Course of these Remedies; for as they incourage the insensible Transpiration, when this is suppress'd the transpirable Matter falls upon the Breast, from whence we endeavour'd to divert it, either by Urine or by the Pores.

By a long Continuation of these simple and easy Medicines I see the Cough disappear, the slow Fever go off, the Obstruction of the Liver and Spitting diminish, the Discharge by Urine increases, Respiration becomes free and easy, and the Colour red and lively, and the Patient gathers Flesh again, in a Word he forgets that he has been indisposed.

When the Consumption is at the second Stage; when the Patient spits Pus; when he is tormented by a violent and continual Cough, when his Fever exceeds a slow Fever and is grown strong, and his Wasting is far gone, &c.

The Exercise of riding is absolutely necessary in this Case, the Tubercles come to Suppuration, threaten to melt the neighbouring ones and to ulcerate them; this Liquefaction could not but end in the Destruction of the Lungs; and to obviate and stop the Continuation of the Suppuration and Ulcer, it is absolutely necessary to make use of all the Remedies proposed to destroy the neighbouring Tubercles ready to inflame and suppurate.

In the same Manner as to hinder a Fire that it may not spread from House to House,

they are obliged to pull down the neighbouring ones where the Fire might catch; so likewise when the Suppuration goes from Tubercle to Tubercle every thing is put in practice to hinder its Progress, and that the Ulcer may not destroy the Lungs.

But you should not have recourse to riding only, but also increase the Dose of the other Remedies, and instead of taking it twice I make them take three times of it, viz. in the Morning, at 4 o'Clock in the Afternoon and at 8.

Let it not be objected here that the Patient is too weak to ride on Horseback. This Objection has been foreseen by *Baglivius*, who answers it L. 2. Prax. Med. *In phthisi cum fluxu colliquativo et aliis desperati morbi symptomatis, demum in chronicis omnibus non invenitur præstantius ac ferme Herculeum remedium quam equitatio multum et diu continuata Neque obstat quod æger sit nimium debilis adeo ut in lecto sese commovere non valeat in tali Casu exercitium inchoandum erit primo rhæda, postea vero equitatione ad multa millaria absolvendum.* " In a Consumption with
 " a colliquating Flux, and other desperate
 " Symptoms, lastly in all chronical Distempers, no better and more *Herculean* Remedy
 " can be found than riding on Horseback continued a long while. And it hinders not
 " that the Patient is so weak that he can hardly
 " move in Bed, in this Case the Exercise is to
 " be begun at first in a Coach, afterwards to
 " be

“ be compleated by riding on Horseback many
 “ Miles.” I shall relate two Observations on
 this Head.

I. OBSERVATION.

A Young Widow distinguish'd in this City
 for her Beauty and Merit, and related to
 a great many good Families, fell into a Con-
 sumption. I observed a Hardness in her Liver,
 which I believed to be the principal Cause of
 her Distemper, and that the Cough, slow
 Fever and Difficulty of breathing depended
 upon it. I employ'd Steel Medicines and other
 Aperitives. But I had hardly begun with
 them, when her Apothecary, a conceited but
 otherwise very honest Man, told her, that he
 gave her those Medicines in Deference to
 Physick, and to do his Duty, but against his
 Opinion and what he had seen practis'd
 many Years by our old Physicians ; this was
 enough to set her against the Use of these
 Medicines. A Consultation was held, every
 thing was found fault with, the Patient was
 ordered to drink Whey, and to take febrifuge
 Electuaries, alkaline, absorbent, &c. the Con-
 sumption went on, and she grew leaner and
 leaner, the Fever increased, she spit Pus, &c.
 Now she is as little pleas'd with the Reme-
 dies prescribed at the Consultation, as she had
 been with the aperitive Medicines she took
 by way of Prevention. I propos'd the Exer-
 cise on Horseback to her as the only Remedy,
 and as such that might be depended upon. I
 there-

thereupon made her read the Passages in Sydenham, Baglivius, Dolæus, and Lassalle our Colleague in his Book upon Disorders of the Breast, Ch. of the Phthisis. In short I omitted nothing to make her have a good Opinion of this Exercise: I represented to her, that it was of great Importance to profit of this Remainder of Autumn, and that she ought to get cured before Winter came in.

The Patient was very weak and her Distemper far gone when we begun to make a Trial of Sydenham's Observation. *Nec in levioribus tantum malis illud remedium obtinuit, sed etiam in tabe tantum non deplorata, &c. atque hoc multiplici Experientia didici, quæ vix me fefellit unquam.* "Nor is this Remedy proper only
" in slight Indispositions, but also in Consump-
" tions that are almost deplorable, &c. and
" this I have learnt by long Experience,
" which scarce ever deceived me"

I made her hire a Country House a quarter of a League from the Town: We begun the Exercise in a Chaise, by which she found herself better, and was able 6 Days after to get on Horseback. She rode 2 Leagues in the Morning, and as much in the Afternoon; her Sleep and Appetite returned by Degrees, and 7 Days after she had rode she cough'd and spit much less; so that 13 Days of this Exercise had procured her such Ease, as promised a perfect Cure by continuing it. However her Relations, who in Troops went to solicit her to quit this ridiculous Exercise, Carriers of the Advice of those Persons of the Faculty, who either through Ignorance or Spight con-
Y
tinued

tinued to find fault with and fulminate against this Remedy, at last persuaded her to leave off; it also happened that rainy Weather came on, which favoured greatly the ardent Desire they had of interrupting that Exercise which they never had heard of. They even obliged her to come to Town, where her Consumption during the Winter increased, and two Months after she left off riding she died.

The Relations failed not to impute her Death to this riding on Horseback, and the Novelty of the Fact, unheard of in this Country, occasioned public Reflexions. The Calumny went even so far as to a printed Ballad, of which I had one sent me by the Author.

Nec tamen audaci cessat fiducia Turno.

II. OBSERVATION.

SOME Years after I had a Gentlewoman in the first Stage of a Consumption; she had a considerable Obstruction in her Liver, spitting Blood after a dry Cough, she had a slow Fever, and grew lean, &c. she had taken many Remedies without Effect, divers Consultations were held to no Purpose, she honoured me with a great Confidence. I resolved to make her travel, this was an Affair of a tender Nature, to make this Proposal to one who could hardly sit up in her Arm-Chair some Hours in the Day. Moreover the Remembrance of this first Observation was not yet obliterated. I opened the Affair to her in this Manner.

Madam,

Madam, said I, it is to be feared that after spitting of Blood, coughing, and falling away considerably, an Ulcer will be formed in your Lungs. After the many Remedies which you have taken without Success, nothing is capable of curing you but the drinking of the Waters of *Bareges*. That dissolving and balsamick Spring has a Vertue of melting all Sorts of Concretions, and healing external Ulcers by pumping and external Application only. It produces the same Effect internally, when it is drunk, and the Tubercles of the Lungs and the Ulcers when they are coming on are cured by this almost miraculous Water. After drinking the Waters you may go to perform your Devotion at *Notre Dame de Gueriscn*, famous for so many Miracles, and afterwards go and see the City of *Toulouse*, from whence you'll then be but one Day's Journey; but I advise you to return in your Coach, and that the Ease of the Boat may not tempt you; for if you embark there the Water may be prejudicial to you.

She answered me, that it was impossible for her to go thither, that I was Witness of her Weakness, that she should die on the Road, that the Air would overcome her so as to make her faint away, if she should go out of her Chamber.

I answer'd, that the Air which she was afraid of was what I rely'd very much upon as a great Assistant; that the Change of Air had always past for a very efficacious Remedy in chronical Diseases; that in regard to the Possibility of her going thither, I only ask'd the Favour of her to try being carried in a

Chair to the Suburb Saint *Severin*: If this first going abroad did her rather Good than Harm, she should the Day following go and see her Daughter about a Mile from *Bordeaux*, and that according to the Success thereof she should take the Air at *Graves* in a Chair, and that she should increase her Airings about the City so far as to be able to perform an ordinary Day's Journey for a prudent Traveller. New Objections arose both from her and her Husband. I comprehended that the true Reason was not alledged, I offer'd to find the Money necessary for this Journey; which Proposition removed immediately all Objections.

The Patient goes out in a Chair to *Notre Dame de Rose*. This going abroad doth her no Harm; the next Day she goes to see her Daughter in a Chaise, returns to Town and sleeps a little better. The third Day she went about a long time at *Graves*, and found Benefit from the Air. In fine, the fourth Day she went to *Langon*, 7 of this Country Leagues from *Bordeaux*, and afterwards to *Bareges*, from whence, before she had tasted the Waters, she wrote to us that she was better. There she stay'd 8 Days, drank 4 or 5 great Glasses of Water every Morning, took the Road which I had laid out for her, (the longest I could, disguising the Appearance of it) and return'd in perfect Health to her House. Her Husband, her Family and Friends could not admire sufficiently the Vertues of the Waters of *Bareges*. As to myself I attributed the Success chiefly to the Exercise without daring to mention it. This

not susceptible of it. It is natural to think that the Percussion of the Air strikes gently the Surface of our Bodies and accelerates the Circulation of the Blood and other Juices.

As the Air is a Body that has a Spring, its elastic Vertue presses upon the Part of the Body which braces it in going forwards whilst it touches but slightly the opposite Side : But in returning, that same opposite Part is compress'd in its Turn, and the Air presses lightly upon the other. By this alternate Compression the Fluids being sometimes press'd upon and sometimes relaxed, their circulatory Motion is accelerated.

4.) You'll not hesitate a Moment longer about the good Effects which these alternate Percussions of the Air can produce, if you give a little Attention to the great Effects produced by Musick. It cannot be deny'd that its Action depends upon the Percussion of the Air and its brisk Undulation. *Musica est de genere eorum quæ aërem acute feriunt et in vividas quasdam undulationes disponunt.* Bagl.

The Soldiers are animated to the Fight by the Sound of the Drum or Trumpet. *Virgil* speaks of *Æneas's* Trumpet in these Words.

*Quo non præstantior alter,
Ære ciere viros, Martemque accendere cantu.*

Asclepiades has observed that Deliriums are cured by Symphony, and I have actually a Patient who finds himself pure well of the Advice I gave him, to go to the famous Concert of this Town every Time that it is performed,

330 A DISSERTATION

performed, and I shall have Room to speak of him in a Dissertation upon the Epilepsy.

Experience shews every Day that Sadness is cured by Musick.

Those who have been stung by the Tarantula find a Remedy in a lively and brisk Symphony, which from a State of Agony, makes them first move their Arms, and Legs, afterwards they get up and dance till they fall into great Sweats which evacuate the Poison. Read *Matthiolus, Kircher, Willis, Gassendi, Baglivius, &c.*

Do we not see daily at the Opera and in great Concerts as that of *Bordeaux*, that Persons who do not understand Musick beat time, and move their Legs and Hands without thinking on it? *Enimvero musica homines sanos et sobrios etiam invitos et aliud cogitantes, in actiones auditi modulaminis æmulas facile rapit et primo statim tibicinis inflatu adstantes manus, et pedes agitare incipiunt, et vix ac ne vix quidem à saltando se continent. Willis de Morb. Convul. Cap. 8.* “ For Musick makes healthy
“ and sedate Persons even against their Will
“ and without thinking on it fall into Actions
“ imitating its Movement; and as soon as the
“ Instrument begins to play the Company move
“ their Hands and Legs, and can hardly re-
“ frain from dancing. *Willis de Morb. Convuls. Cap. 8.*

All this proves the great Advantage that may be reap'd from the Percussion of the Air: If you read *Borelli's Book de vi percussioneis*, you'll not any longer admire that a little Motion can produce great Effects.

But

But to return to our Subject. In the second Stage of Consumptions I alter the Regimen of Diet, altho' in the first I make them observe an exact Manner of living, allowing them Meat of light Digestion, without any seasoning; however in the second, not to exasperate the Fever, I make the Patient live upon Cow's Milk boil'd and skimm'd and mixt with an equal Quantity of Tea. Milk is a simple Food ready digested, which doth not molest the Stomach if taken by itself, it passes on easily and doth not give to the Heart or Arteries any Resistance, but yields to their Impulse; and this is the principal Reason why it is a Specifick in hectick flow and long Fevers. *Bonum autem et tabidis dare et non acutè admodum febricitantibus. Hipp. in Aph.* "It is good for hectick Persons and those whose Fevers are not very acute."

Let it not be said that this simple Aliment is insufficient for the Patient's Nourishment. Man can live upon a sma^l Matter, as has been seen by the Experience of a Ship of this Port, whose Crew, by the Masts being damaged, was reduced to subsist on a few Ounces of Biscuit and a little Water 17 Days; and yet none of them died for Hunger. And in this present Case Milk taken every 4 Hours is more nourishing than the Juice of Flesh, or solid Aliments, which rather feed the Distemper than the Patient.

I have sometimes, nay very often put into a Milk Diet Persons that had laboured under a Dysentery two or three Years, as also such

332 A DISSERTATION, &c.

as had been troubled with a Diarrhœa many Years. This Remedy has never failed me, with this Circumstance, that some Patients being weigh'd before they enter'd upon this Diet, I found after they were cured that they had considerably increased in Weight, which amounted in the Person of a Cooper to ten Pounds.

Finally, the Patient being arrived at the last Stage, of whom *Hippocrates* pronounces, *Hunc intra breve tempus periturum asserito, et ex alvi profluvio periturum*. "You are to prognosticate that he will die soon, and that a Diarrhœa will carry him off." It is not prudent to take him in hand. *Summa prudentiæ pars est eorum qui a morbis devicti sunt curationem non aggredi, ne temere infamentur ea præfidia quæ multis fuere salutis*. "It is the highest Prudence not to undertake those whom the Distemper has conquer'd, that such Means may not be rashly condemn'd as have been salutary to many." Let the Patient bear the Reproach of having waited too long. It is not to be expected that this Method should perform the Miracle of replacing the Loss of a considerable Substance, occasioned in the Lungs by the Suppuration of the Tubercles, and by an Ulcer; that extreme Leanness and a Consumption should be cured, when nothing remains but Skin and Bones; or that a Diarrhœa which has reduced the Patient to extreme Weakness and even Fainting, should leave Room to attempt any thing.

The End of the First Volume.

